



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 07588028 0

1000

25

THE
CURSORY SKETCH
OF THE STATE OF THE
NAVAL, MILITARY AND CIVIL ESTABLISHMENT,
LEGISLATIVE, JUDICIAL,
AND
DOMESTIC OECONOMY OF THIS KINGDOM,
DURING THE FOURTEENTH CENTURY;
WITH
A PARTICULAR ACCOUNT
OF THE CAMPAIGN OF
KING EDWARD THE THIRD.
IN
NORMANDY and FRANCE, in the Years 1345 and 1346,
to the Taking of CALAIS.

Collected merely from the Ancient Manuscripts in the BRITISH MUSEUM, and elsewhere.

BY JOHN BREE, A. M.
Rector of RYSHOLME, in the County of Lincoln and MARY TAY, in the County of Essex.

V O L. I.

L O N D O N :
PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR,
And sold by J. DEBRETT, Piccadilly ; T. GARDINER, Stationer and Bookseller, Prince's
Street, Cavendish-Square ; Messieurs RIVINGTON, St. Paul's Church-Yard ;
W. RICHARDSON, Royal Exchange ; J. ROBSON, New Bond-Street ;
J. STOCKDALE, Piccadilly ; Messieurs ROBINSON, Pater-noster Row ;
and most of the eminent Booksellers throughout England.

M.DCC.XCI.

I N T R O D U C T I O N.

BEFORE I proceed to a minute and circumstantial detail of this campaign, it will not, I flatter myself, be deemed an impertinent or useless attention in me to prefix to the several parts of it such general preliminary observations and illustrations, as may appear to me conducive, if not necessary, to give my readers, (at least those of them who have been less conversant in the study of ancient history,) a somewhat more just, full, and comprehensive idea, not merely of the subject there treated of, but of the general outline and complexion of the national character, manners, and habits of those remote ages.

Truly sensible however of my own inability to do in any degree full justice to the subject, when I consider the dangerous unbeaten path I am taking; the extreme scarcity of materials, except from single unconnected facts, detached and scattered here and there through an immense variety of volumes in manuscript, of parliamentary, judicial inquest, and official documents ;

cuments; which, although of genuine and unquestionable authority and authenticity, yet by a strange fatality have been in many instances almost entirely neglected or overlooked by succeeding writers; and that to select, connect, and reduce into order, such a disseminated chaos of authentic valuable materials, so as by their assistance to form a consistent story; and to rescue the memory of the persons, facts, circumstances, and connections of ancient times, from the oblivion into which they are sinking: is an undertaking however bold and arduous, yet at least equally instructive, entertaining and useful. Every minute trace and circumstance, however short or imperfect, of their ancestors four hundred and fifty years ago, cannot but be pleasing and acceptable, at least to their descendants of the present day, if not to the public at large; and conduce by reviving the memory of their ancient alliances and connections, to strengthen the amity of private families to each other, and reflect an additional ray of honour on their present consequence and respectability. And in a public point of view, the advantages are equally striking and self-evident; as it is merely from these sources, principally, if not entirely, that an accurate, distinct, full, and comprehensive idea can be formed of the persons and transactions of ancient times. It is perhaps the very best method a wise man can pursue to make up his mind and to form his own opinion
and

and idea of them. History confines itself to public, and thinks it beneath its dignity to descend to the elucidation of the characters and manners of private life. It dwells on the actions of Princes and heroes, the splendor of courts, the wisdom of legislative, and the integrity of judicial and executive administration; holding to our view the virtues of the citizen rather than of the man; whereas the deductions we are apt to infer from the one to the other are not always to be depended upon; and yet perhaps the latter are to the full as pleasing, instructive, and useful objects of our contemplation. When a character of eminence in the senate or the field, in arts, in wisdom, or in virtue, is displayed before us with all the fascinating powers of an eloquent pen; the mind, enamoured of its object, feels an anxious impatience to learn every minute particular if possible of the hero of the story; his descent, situation, marriage, children, possessions, and habits in private life; with respect to all which particulars the historian generally and indeed necessarily observes an almost total silence. The particular fact or facts once detailed, you hear no more of the party. Whereas by investigating the minutiae of the parliament records, rolls of Chancery, and the other three superior courts; inquests *post obitum*, *ad quod damnum*, *de ætate probanda*, Ward's and Livery's and other official books still in preservation in

great variety and abundance in the British Musæum, and in other public and private collections; you are sure of finding in general many curious particulars of the kind I mentioned, and of gaining a full and distinct view of the object of your inquiry. And I will venture to hazard as a more than probable conjecture, that it were possible even now to collect and recover nearly as full and particular an account of the occurrences public or private of this nation, by pursuing this method (without referring at all to the printed accounts,) for any period of time from Henry the 3d's reign (or even higher still is so far and in proportion as the above-mentioned authorities are still in preservation) as it would be to do it for the same period immediately preceding the present century. And perhaps too I might safely add, that such an account fairly and impartially taken from these authentic registers of fact of indisputable authenticity, in point of real information, particular statement and an unquestionable authority, would be superior to any printed modern account whatever of the same period now extant.

Having for the last four years, as some relief and amusement under a most embarrassing and disagreeable situation, given up my time almost entirely to researches of this kind, under the
favour

favour and indulgence of the Governors, Trustees, and Officers of the British Museum; without any immediate object at first in view or inducement beyond information, and the pleasure of becoming better acquainted with the history, the manners and habits of those early ages: I have been happy enough to make a large collection of curious, instructive and entertaining extracts from a great variety of manuscripts these principally under this and the four following reigns.

There is something indeed highly discouraging and irksome in the first outset of an attempt of this kind. The strange uncouth hand in which many of the ancient manuscripts are wrote, the precise similarity of shape in which several letters of the alphabet are struck, the arbitrary substitution of a few letters with circumflexes and characters to signify whole words, the parchment or paper changed, and the ink mouldered away and nearly effaced in many places with damp and age; where often the reader has no other clue to guide him but the construction and sense of the passage, and where too much after all must be left to conjecture rather than certainty: all these circumstances, with regard to many of them, make it comparatively as difficult to become a perfect master of the hand, as it would be to acquire a new language.

All

All these discouraging checks, however, are sure to give way to a patient persevering attention, and gradually diminish and disappear. You soon become master of the idiom, if I may so express myself, as well of that particular hand-writing, as of the writer's language and manner of expressing his conceptions; and the reader will equally in both respects find himself amply repaid for the difficulty and labour of the undertaking.

For there is in my opinion in the compositions of those early ages, as well English as Norman French (in the latter of which language or in Latin records of almost all the parliamentary and judicial proceedings and public acts are preserved and handed down to us;) a chaste, nervous simplicity, and definite correct precision that is strikingly pleasing and beautiful.

In order however to taste these beauties, the reader must first overcome that disgust which the contrasted nicety of modern taste and refinement in these particulars must feel; at seeing the words charged with such a redundancy of letters in the spelling, (the same words not only spelled differently in different manuscripts but in the same, and sometimes even two or three different ways even in the same sentence;) and the general
disregard

disregard and inattention to the minutiae of grammatical construction and propriety, so frequently observable in these manuscripts. All these effects of superfluity, redundance and inaccuracy however, are but of trifling consequence and easily accounted for.

Before the invention of printing in every country, at least in the ruder ages of this and every other nation upon earth, what little learning there was in the world (I would be understood to mean the world at large, diffused among the people in general, out of the precincts of the academical, monastic or other public seminaries of instruction and their immediate pupils); must have been erected and subsisted upon a very sandy and precarious foundation. Books of every kind, and above all those treating of the elementary principles of grammar, were few in number and still more difficult of access. Even these few however, could not be multiplied from the correct archetype of the author in any other way than by the laborious mercenary pen of the transcriber. The copyists then, many of them possibly, as many are still, mere copyists rather than good grammarians; fast rather than correct writers; and more intent on getting to the end of the page, than to give the distinct words and meaning of their author; which naturally and easily
accounts

accounts for the frequent inaccuracies we meet with in the text. So likewise, in regard to the mode of spelling, as there was then no fixed rule and standard to be directed by, and of which now, since the invention of the press, the public prints are established as the only certain and fixed criterion ; the writers of those ages could not possibly have any other method of regulating their mode of spelling any words, than either by the usage adopted in those writings they had access to, that is, by observing how others wrote the words ; and which necessarily would vary more or less in every new hand-writing they examined : or else by the ear, that is, they modified the spelling of the words as near as they could to common or to their own manner of pronouncing them ; which necessarily must and did equally vary too then as it does now ; especially in persons of education and polite intercourse or otherwise ; and in the local variation of provincial dialects in the remote parts of the kingdom, in proportion to their distance from the capitol, the seat of refinement and propriety of expression, and their vicinity to those parts of the kingdom using a different language. The writer perfectly aware of this variation, and with a view to soften that sameness of repetition rather disgusting to the eye, they varied their manner of spelling the same word sometimes two or three times in the same sentence ; not from carelessness

lessness or inattention, but in order to identify the word itself, (if I may so express myself,) and to make themselves comprehended and understood by all their readers of whatever province, dialect, or mode of spelling.

And here our attention is arrested, gratefully to acknowledge the great advantage and benefit to mankind, resulting from the invention of the Art of Printing. Not only as it enables an author, at a small expence and labour, to multiply the copy of his work with a perfect accuracy and correctness to any extent desired; but that it serves to ascertain and fix the orthography, and indeed the language itself; each mutually assisting in a gradual progression, and advancing each the other to a certain acme of perfection; beyond which by an over-refinement and false affectation of taste, and the innovating introduction of exotic terms, it will act in an inverse ratio; and gradually sap, undermine and destroy the purity, strength and energy of the language itself: as has been the case, although not from the press indeed, but quite from different causes with the Grecian states gradually, after the loss of their freedom and conquest by the Romans; and with the Romans themselves, in the lower ages of their empire. These difficulties once overcome and disgusts reconciled, the reader will gradually feel and contract a favourable

idea of and taste for these ancient works of the pen. He will find that disdaining equally the adventitious aids of deception, sophistry or high colouring, they speak only the simple language of truth, pure and chaste as the manners themselves in those primæval days of guileless integrity. He will there find the derivation of a great number of the English words, and the genuine original sense in which they were first used and adopted; and in the Norman language the matrix of the modern French, and how far it has gained or lost, by the gradual refinements and improvements of subsequent ages, to the present time. The same too with regard to our own language, and indeed with regard to our laws, customs, habits and institutions of every kind whatever, civil, political, religious and domestic. It is surely a most pleasing, instructive, useful and wise speculation, to contemplate all these severally in their ruder elements and beginnings; and to trace them in their gradual progression through every intermediate stage, to that precise point of civilization, improvement, polish and perfection, which they have severally now attained to, through the unremitting attention, providence, care and wisdom of the succeeding and present times.

The Author, in the course of this investigation, soon began to perceive with equal surprize, pleasure and gratification,
what

what an infinite treasure of curious, interesting and valuable facts, circumstances and anecdotes, as well in public as private life, may be collected from these ancient manuscripts, the faithful registers of fact, policy, intercourse and tenure in those distant early ages, and how they mutually throw a light upon, explain, illustrate and prove each other. They are for the most part official registers of proceedings and records of parliament; of the courts of justice; of the executive administration of government in the civil, military and naval departments; of the creation of honours; of genealogic descents, marriages and successions; of inquests taken upon oath of *post obits*, *de etate probanda*, *writs ad quod damnum*, fines, reliefs, assessments of subsidies, customs, aids, &c. and other collateral essays, tracts, annals, and anecdotes, &c. the productions of private individuals, illustrative of these public documents, and so far authentic and of authority too, as they do not impinge or contradict the first, and tend only to illustrate and confirm them. Struck forcibly with the idea, what great and important advantages might be derived to the republic of literature, the advancement of historical information, and in short to the general interests of the public at large; and of individuals too in particular very often, in tracing descents, successions and personal rights; if a full,

comprehensive, judicious selection were made out of this unconnected scattered mass of valuable matter ; concentrated and arranged regularly in series, and reduced to a bird's eye prospect, of any or indeed of all of the early periods of this monarchy, (so far as such are still to be found in preservation); as a foundation and encouragement to some great and superior genius present or future, in point of character, abilities and impartiality competent and equal to the undertaking, to some Clarendon, Hume or Robertson ; to favour the world hereafter with a more full, particular and complete history of those early periods, than any perhaps we have at present. Under the impression of these ideas, the Author was induced to extend his researches throughout every department of official document, wherever any material information might reasonably be looked for. He has endeavoured, however, imperfectly to arrange and connect them severally into a consistent story ; and relying upon the candour of a generous public, ventures to offer them the following sheets, as a faint sketch, however defective and imperfect, of what may be done by abler hands in this way, towards recovering every information derivable from these valuable remains of antiquity ; many of them already mouldering away with damp and age, and the writing fading sensibly every day, and in some parts discharged and illegible ;

illegible; and forming thereby a fund of indisputably authentic communication, for the assistance of future historians, and the use and entertainment of the public in general.

For this purpose I have selected a short period of the English history, the events of the campaign of that wise, brave, glorious Prince King Edward the Third in France, in the 20th and 21st years of his reign, from July the 6th, 1345, to the taking of Calais in September 1346; with the collateral events and occurrences here at home during the same interval of eighteen months. A period short indeed, but considered in all its circumstances perhaps the brightest, the most memorable, and the most glorious æra of the English history recorded in our annals. When that great Prince, with an army not exceeding thirty thousand brave Englishmen, Welch and Irish, without any foreign aid or assistance, except a few Gascon, Flemish, and other Lords, with their companies, in the whole not exceeding a thousand men in number; made good his descent on the coasts of Normandy, and traversed from the Isle of Constance to Caen, and in his return from Caen to Calais, with an uninterrupted chain of victories and successes; ravaged and subdued the Dutchies of Normandy, Brittany and Guienne; obliged the Duke of Normandy, at the head of an immense army, to raise the siege of d'Aguillon; forced

forced the passage of Blanch Tanque, and defeated at Cressy the collected power of France and the auxiliary forces of several of the neighbouring princes in alliance, commanded by the king in person. His proceeding immediately after to lay siege to Calais with the remainder of his little army, protracting the siege through the rigour of winter, and after eleven months continuance, and having a second time discomfited this immense force commanded by the king of France in person coming to its relief, obliged them to retreat *re infecta*; and by that means compelled the city to surrender at discretion. To all this we have to add likewise the signal victory of the English forces at home over the Scots at Durham, and the taking their king prisoner; and lastly, the English navy riding triumphant in the Channel, or lying at anchor upon the coasts of France during the whole time to attend the operations of the army, going and returning loaded with prisoners and the spoils of that unhappy desolated country, without check or controul. All these circumstances collectively considered form that glorious aggregate of military prowess, achievement and success, which perhaps never had its parallel in any age or country. It fully confirmed and established the aboriginal claim of England to the dominion of the British seas; and laid the foundation of that pre-eminence in martial
glory

glory and the feats of war, which they have so justly earned and uniformly supported in a thousand dangers in the field. And it was at this crisis too, and under this and the following reigns, that the Lords and Commons exerted themselves with a patriotic zeal, firmness and intrepidity, in endeavouring to guard and restore their old constitution, and to check the innovating strides of arbitrary power, as well civil as hierarchical, by their remonstrances and petitions so frequently occurring in every parliament, against the levying subsidies, customs, and imposts by the king and the great Council, without the assent of the Commons in parliament; against the impositions, extortions and provisions of the Court of Rome; against the illegal jurisdiction, powers and sentences, in all matters determinable at common law of the High Constables, Earl Marshals and Admiralty Courts, the Constables of Dover Castle, &c. and other illegal modes of process on *ex parte information*, under writs of the Great or Privy Seal or writs of Chancery, without summons, specific charge or citation served upon the party, or liberty to defend himself in open court or confront his accusers: and above all in obtaining a confirmation by statute of that grand palladium of the liberty and security of the subject, that no person of the rank of nobility should be tried in charges of treason or felony, but if I may so express myself,

myself, by a jury of their own body or their peers, and every other person of whatever rank, condition or degree in the same manner. I may add too the change introduced of the manner of holding the parliaments by the several degrees and estates fitting and holding their deliberations severally in different houses. Although I do not recollect to have observed any Speaker of the Commons regularly appointed and presented to the king for his approbation on the 2d day of the parliament, until the last year of this reign, in 1377, when Sir Thomas Hungerford was chosen, and is the first Speaker I believe mentioned as such in either of the Harl. Manusc. No. 14. or No. 21.

All the above, with many other equally salutary and beneficial regulations, moved by petition of the Lords, Clergy and Commons, and many of them enacted during this and the subsequent parliaments, laid the foundation, and formed the outline of our most excellent constitution; gradually enlarged, improved and advanced, by the wisdom of succeeding parliaments in the subsequent ages, to that degree of exalted perfection in which it happily subsists at present.

With regard to the general history of this campaign I have not the vanity to suppose myself in any degree competent to offer any thing new, or worthy of the public attention upon a subject, which has been the laboured topic and favourite theme of so many men of genius and writers of eminence in history,

history, to do it full justice, from that day to the present. I shall confine myself merely to the task of recovering and presenting to the public eye a fair and impartial statement of the relations and accounts of these great events, given then by the parties themselves, who were eye-witnesses and actors in them, and by others living at or near the time. I shall make the groundwork of this account Thomas Avesbury's *Collections de Vita et Gestis Regis Edwardi Tertii*. Harl. Manusc. No. 200, in the British Museum; which, as far as I am to judge of them at present, appear to me to carry with them every mark and signature of authenticity, and of being really what they purport to be. They contain a series of copies of original, authentic and most valuable papers, little if at all as I imagine known to the public at present for what they are; namely, original letters of King Edward the Third, the Pope Clement the Sixth, Henry Plantagenet Earl of Derby afterwards Earl and created Duke of Lancaster, Sir Thomas Daggeworth, Sir Thomas Braddeston, Richard Wenkle the king's confessor, and other accounts to England by authority, with the accord of Normandy, &c. giving in detail narrative of the distinct parts of that campaign and their successes there. With these I shall interweave in their several places Froissart's account, of these events from a very ancient if not the very

first edition, *imprimé à Paris pour Guillaume Eustace libraire et relieur juré de l'université*, without date; which, although incorrect in the printing from the redundancy of repetition in some parts, yet appears to me to contain a great deal of matter not to be found in the subsequent editions of that author. Froissart's history in my opinion is upon the whole in every respect, much superior to any other account of the writers of that age. And I choose it for this purpose, as much more diffusive and minute in the relation of particulars than Avesbury's Collections; with the addition of a great variety of curious circumstances and facts, some of them not even mentioned at all either there, or by any of our writers that I have yet met with; yet such as I shall prove to have unquestionably occurred and happened. At the same time in confirmation, illustration or proof of Avesbury's or Froissart's account, I shall as I proceed, subjoin any additional collateral extracts or authorities from any other manuscripts, records or cotemporary authors, that may serve to throw any additional light on the particular part I am treating of.

But before I proceed to give the particulars of this campaign, by way of introduction and with a view to facilitate a just comprehension and better understanding the history in general of this and the following reigns; I judge it will not be deemed

deemed an impertinent or improper attention in myself, or unacceptable to my readers in general; if I premise such cursory and desultory remarks, observations and authorities, as may serve to sketch out a faint outline and imperfect idea of the then state of this kingdom in the leading departments of its establishment and constitution in those early ages, during the fourteenth century; particularly of the navy, the army, the tenures and services by which lands were then held, the creations of honour, distinction of estates and degrees, its parliaments, laws and customs in general; together with such other curious circumstances, facts or anecdotes, whether of public or private life, as may in my judgment contribute to the less informed reader's instruction or entertainment. And here I shall be particularly attentive to premise a concise selection of such material particulars, anecdotes and circumstances, as I have been able to meet with, relating to those Earls, Barons, Knights and Esquires, who distinguished themselves in this expedition, and shared the glories of the field either in France, or indeed here at home: and even farther to anticipate and continue the remainder of their story through life: which I would wish to be considered severally as distinct unities in themselves, independent of the general account. I am very sensible that these will run into great length, perhaps more

than the account itself; as I shall make it a point to be as full and particular in this part of my work as may be, by inserting every thing that may do honour to, and illustrate the history of these immortal heroes. And I conceive this a more eligible method to take, than by inserting them in the narrative by way of note, to be perpetually breaking in upon the thread of the story; and loading it with a voluminous mass of heterogeneous matter. I shall take care however not to insert any thing of this kind as fact, but upon authentic proof; nor to build conjectures upon them, without resting them on what appears to me at least, a probable foundation of proof likewise.

I have farther to acquaint the reader that as this book will consist principally of extract and quotation from the old manuscripts, I have indulged full liberty in giving them ad libitum, either in copy, version or abridgement, with a view to prune their excrescences, avoid tedious repetitions, and to give a more pleasing variety to the page: endeavouring however with all the care I could to give, in the translated parts, the close literal meaning; in the abridgements, the full purport; and wherever the extracts, either in the whole or in part, appear to me strikingly curious and important, either for the beauty of the composition or language, difficult expression,

pression, illustration or proof of any weighty point or circumstance; there invariably I have confined myself to copy the very words of the original manuscript. Neither in a first attempt of this kind, new and in an unbeaten path, have I presumed but very sparingly to obtrude my own opinion or comments; choosing rather to confine myself in general to a fair just statement merely, and referring it to the judgment of the reader to reason, and make his own deductions from the authorities there adduced and recited. After all I am very sensible that there must be in a first attempt of this kind in general, and perhaps more particularly in the present, but too many inaccuracies, defects, errors and imperfections. All these the author submits to the candour of a generous public. Their detection, if made with temper and decency, will meet with every respectful attention; and the communication of any farther matter supplemental to or illustrative of any of the parts of this volume, every grateful acknowledgement from the author. He has only to offer in his defence, that he has endeavoured uniformly to adhere to that single wise precept or advice to writers upon these kind of subjects; *Ne quid falsi dicere audeat, ne quid veri non audeat*; and to subjoin in the words of Horace,

Si quid novisti rectius istis

Candidus imperti, si non his utere mecum.

With

With regard to the execution of the press, the author has farther to apologize for those inaccuracies, defects of punctuation, or inelegant disposition or arrangement of the page, which he fears may occur but too frequently in the following sheets. A mere novice in the method of either directing or correcting the press; he has only to plead, that he has not been wanting in sincere wish and endeavour to the best of his judgment, to leave as little occasion as might be for objections of this kind: and has subjoined a table of such errata as he has been fortunate enough to discover, which the reader will be so kind as to correct with his pen, and such others as may have escaped him. The truth is, if his subscription had met with that encouragement, he was willing to flatter himself it might have done, all circumstances considered; the author had intended to have procured some learned assistance, to have revised and corrected the work itself, and particularly the orthography, arrangement and disposition of the page and the correcting the proofs from the press. But the event unhappily disappointing every hope and possibility of the kind, and not having been favoured with friendly opinion, advice or assistance from any quarter whatever, the whole labouring oar of compilation, arrangement, disposition, and the superintending the press, has rested entirely upon his weak abilities. And it was not
but

but with the greatest difficulty, and at great disadvantage, that he has been able at all to fulfil his engagements with the public; and to offer this volume, such as it is, to their acceptance. And those that know best the unfair, insidious, underhand artifices that have been used, the uncommon difficulties and discouragements the author has had to struggle with throughout every stage of this undertaking, will find perhaps juster matter of surprize, that with all its imperfections, its execution has been upon the whole so tolerable as it is, or indeed that the author has been able to accomplish its publication at all.

As a farther introduction to the more immediate subject of this volume, I think it may prove no unacceptable entertainment to the reader, to premise and collect in one point of view some of the leading authorities descriptive of the state of the British navy, from the earliest times to the beginning of king Edward the Third's reign. These I have extracted, and shall merely recite in their order, without preface or comment, from a manuscript Tract in the Harleian Collection, No. 6274, entitled, the Sovereignty of the Seas, &c. of England, proved
by

by record, history, and the municipal laws of the kingdom, &c. by Sir John Burrough, Knight, Keeper of the Records in the Tower of London, &c. *Tempore Regis Caroli.* In which he appears to me clearly to make out and prove, that the British claim to the dominion of the sea (I would be understood however to mean only here of those seas surrounding the island of Great Britain) is by no means a chimerical pretension; but if I may be allowed the expression, an aboriginal right, by prescription and pre-occupancy, resulting from their insular situation and infinite variety and abundance of commodious ports and havens; bravely acquired, held and possessed without a rival, or any material interruption, during the succession of ages, from the first introduction and use of shipping, down to the present times.

He begins with Julius Cæsar's account of the marine of the Ancient Britons, at the time of his descent upon this island, stating that when Julius Cæsar first undertook the invasion of this our isle of Britain, he found the neighbouring nation of the Gauls in a manner altogether ignorant of this island itself; the condition of the inhabitants, their towns, havens and approaches.

“ *Quæ omnia fere Gallis erant incognita, neque etiam te-*
“ *mere præter mercatores illo adit quisquam, neque eis ipsis*
“ *præter*

“ præter oram maritimam, atque eas regiones quæ sunt contra
 “ Galliam, notum est.” See the words of Cæsar’s Comment.
 de Bell. Gallico, lib. 4, whereby it appeareth that the Britons
 kept off all strangers except merchants from approaching their
 confines; and that those merchants in their access were re-
 strained to the shore only that lay opposite to the Gauls, with-
 out being suffered to make further discovery of the more re-
 mote coasts. Infomuch that Cæsar upon diligent examination
 of the same merchants, (ibidem says) “ neque quanta esset in-
 “ sulæ magnitudo, neque quæ et quantæ nationes incoherent,
 “ neque quem usum belli haberent, aut quibus institutis ute-
 “ rentur; neque qui essent ad majorum navium multitudinem
 “ idonei portus reperiri poterat.” Which restraint of strangers
 they could not otherwise make good, but by the goodness and
 greatness of the shipping; for though Cæsar says in lib. de
 Bello Civili 1mo. “ carinæ ac stammina ex levi materia fiebant,
 “ reliquum corpus navium viminibus contextum, coriis tege-
 “ batur.” Yet in another part (de Bello Gallico, lib. 3,) he
 sayth, “ Ipsorum naves ad hunc modum factæ armatæque,
 “ erant carinæ aliquanto planiores quam nostrarum navium,
 “ quo facilius vada ac decessum æstus excipere possent. Proræ
 “ admodum erectæ, atque item puppes ad magnitudinem fluc-
 “ tuum tempestatumque accommodatæ; naves totæ factæ ex
 “ robore, &c.” and again,

E

“ Neque

“ Neque enim his nostræ roſtro nocere poterant, tanta
 “ erat firmitudo; neque propter altitudinem facile telum adi-
 “ gebatur, et eadem de cauſa minus incommode ſcopulis con-
 “ tinebatur; accidebat ut cum ſævire ventus cæpiſſet, et ſe
 “ vento dediffent, et tempeſtatem ferent facilius, et in vadis
 “ conſiſterent tutius, et ab æſtu dereliſtæ, nihil ſaxa et cautes
 “ timerent:” and preſently after, “ circiter ducentum viginti
 “ naves eorum paratiſſimæ, atque omni genere armorum orna-
 “ tiſſimæ et portu proſectæ noſtris adverſæ conſtiterunt; ne-
 “ que ſatis Bruto qui clafſi præerat; neque tribunis militum
 “ centurionibuſque, quibus ſingulæ naves erant attributæ,
 “ conſtabat; quid agerent, aut quam rationem pugnæ in-
 “ ſiſterent. Roſtro enim noceri non poſſe cognoverunt, tur-
 “ ribus autem excitatis, tamen hæc altitudo puppium ex bar-
 “ baris navibus ſuperabat, ut neque ex inferiori loco, ſatis
 “ commode tela adigi poſſent, et miſſa a Gallis gravius acci-
 “ derent.”

And again in L. de Bello Gallico, 4.

“ Quod omnibus fere Gallicis Bellis, hoſtibus noſtris inde
 “ ſubminiſtrata auxilia, intelligebat.”

He next ſtates, that Edgar king of England, during his
 reign, which commenced, A. D. 956, formed a fleet of 4000
 ſhips,

ships, in four divisions of 1000 each, with which every year after Easter, he circuited the island, scouring the seas of all foreign ships. And that king Edgar, in the charter of the foundation of the cathedral church of Worcester, styleth himself as follows :

“ *Altitonantis Dei largiflua Clementia qui est Rex Regum.*”

Edgarus Anglorum Basileus, omniumque regum, insularum, oceanique Britanniam circumjacentis, cunctarumque nationum quæ infra eam includuntur, Imperator et Dominus, &c.

That king Ethelred, circiter anno 978, caused every 300 hides of land to furnish a ship, which assembling at Sandwych, formed the greatest navy that ever this kingdom set forth to sea. And that Canute asserted the English sovereignty of the seas when sitting down upon a chair, which he had ordered to be placed within the sea, he vauntingly cried out, *Tu mare meæ ditionis es, et terra in qua sedeo mea est.*

He farther states, that in 1299, being the 28th year of king Edward the First's reign, the king of France by his admiral Reymer Grimbald first disputed and challenged the sovereignty of the seas with the English. When the two kings submitted

their several pretensions to the award of certain procurators as the record nameth them, for the maritime coast of the greatest part of the Christian world ; Genoua, Spain, Germany, Holland, Zealand, Friezland, Denmark and Norway : who made this remarkable acknowledgement and declaration following in the old French of that time under the following Latin title.

De superioritate maris Angliæ, et jure officii admirallatus Angliæ.

A vous seigneurs auditours, deputez par les rois d'Angleterre et de France, pur redresser les dommages faitz as gents de leur royalmes, et des autres terres subgitz a leur seigneuries par mier et par terre, en temps de pees et de trewes ; monstrent les procurours dez prelatz et nobles et dez admiral de la mier d'Angleterre et des communaltees des cites et des villes et des merchants, mariners, messagiers et pelerings ; et de toutz autres terres subgites a la seigneurie du dit roi d'Angleterre et daillours ; sicome de la marine de Genua, Cataloigne, Espaigne, Almaine, Hoyland, Seland, Triez, Dennemarch, et Norweye ; et des plusieurs autres lieux del empire. Que come les rois d'Angleterre par raison du dit roiaulme en temps dont ny ad memoire du contraire, eussent este en paisible possession de la foveraine seigneurie de la mier d'Angleterre et de isles esteantz

esteantz en ycelle ; per ordinance et establiſſment des lois, estatutz et defenſes des armes, et des vaiſſeaulx, aultrement garniez que vaiſſeaulx de merchandise ; et de ſeurete prendre et ſauve garde en toutz cas que meſtier ſerra, et per ordinance entre toute maniere des gentz taunt de aultre ſeigneurie come de leur propre ; et de toutes aultres faits neceſſaires a la garde des pees, droiture et equite par illceques paſſantz, et par ſovereine garde et toute maniere de conizance de juſtice haute et baſſe, ſur les ditz lois, estatutz, ordinances et defences ; et par toutz autres faitz queux a la government de ſouveraigne ſeigneurie appartenir purront, en lieux avantdiz : et A. de B. admiral de la dite mer deputez de le roy d'Engleterre et toutz les autres admiralls par meſmes celui roy d'Engleterre et ſes anceſtres jadis roy d'Engleterre avoient eſte en paiſible poſſeſſion de la dite ſoverein garde ove la conſance et juſtice et tous les autres appartenants avantditz ; forſpris en cas d'appell et querele faits de eux a leur ſouverains rois d'Engleterre, de faulte de droit ou de malvays de juggement, et eſpecialement par empechement mettre, et juſtice faire, ſeurete prendre de la pees de toute maniere des gentz uſant d'armes en la dites mers, ou menantz neſs aultrement appareillez ou garniez que appartient au neſs merchantz, ed en toute aultre point du queux come poet avoir reſonable cauſe de ſuſpection vers eux de roberie

rie

rie ou dez aultres mes faits. Et come les meïstres des nefz du dit royaulme d'Engleterre, en absence dez dits admiralls, eussent este en païssible possession de conuistre et jugger de toutz faitz en la dite mier, contre tote manere des gentz, selon les leies, estatutz, et defenses, franchises et costumes; et come en le primer article d'alliance nadgairs faitz entre les ditz rois, en les traitez sur la darrain pees de Paris, soient comprises les parolles que sensuient, en un cedula annex a yceste. “ Pri-
“ merement il est traite et accorde entre nous et les menagiers
“ et procurours deffuditz, en nom dez ditz rois que yceux
“ rois ferront l'un et l'autre desore, bons, verais et loiaux
“ amys, et aydantz contre tout homme, sauve l'eglise de
“ Rome, en tiel manere que si auscun ou plusours quiconques
“ ils fussent, voloyent *depointicer*, (desinheriter) empecher,
“ ou troubler les dits rois, es franchises, es libertes, es privi-
“ leges, es droits, es droitures, ou es costumes de eux, et de
“ leur royaulmes; que ils ferront bons et loiaux amys, et
“ aydauntz contre tout homme qui puisse vivre et morir; a
“ defendre, garder, et maintenir les franchises, les libertes,
“ les privileges, les droits, droitures, et les costumes deffus-
“ dites. Excepte le dit roi d'Engleterre, Mounseïur Johan Duc
“ de Breban, en Brabant, et ces heirs descenduz de luy et de
“ la fille le roy d'Engleterre; et excepte pur le dit nostre
“ seigneur

‘ seigneur le roy de France excellent Prince, Monsieur Aubert roy d’Alemaigne, et ses heires roys d’Alemaigne, et
“ Mounseigneur Johan Counte de Hanon en Hanan, et que l’un
“ ne ferra en conseil, ou en ayde, ou l’autre pas de vie,
“ membre, estat, ne honour temporel.”

Monsieur Reymer Grimbault maitre de la navie du dit roy de France, qui se dit estre admirall de la dit mier deputez par son seigneur avantdit, pur sa guerre contre les Flemings apres la dite alliance faite et assicure, et contre la fourme et la force de mesme alliance et l’intention de eux qui la firent l’office del admiralte en la dit mier d’Engleterre; per commission du dit roy de France, torcieusement empris et use un an et plus, en pernant les gentz et merchantz du royaume d’Engleterre, et d’aillours par la dite mier passauntz, avecque leur biens : et les gens ainsi prises, livra a la prison de son dit seigneur le roy de France; et leur biens et marchandises, a les recevoir par mesmes celui roy de France a ceo deputez, en les portes de son dit royaume, come a luy forfaitz et acquis : fist amener par son jugement et agard et la prise et detinue de dits gentz ou leur dits biens et marchandises, et son dit jugement et agard sur la forfaiture de eux; et acquist une justifie devant vous seigneurs auditours en-
.....
escriptz parmy l’auctorite de la dite commission sur l’admiralite
avant

avant dite par luy ainsi usurpe, et parmy une defense communement faite par le roy d'Engleterre parmy son poer selon la forme de la tiers article de l'alliance avantdite; que contient les parolles deffus escripts, en requerant; que de ceo il en fuiffé quitte et absolve en graunt damage et prejudice du dit roy d'Engleterre, et des prelatz et nobles et aultrez deffus nomez. Pourquoi les ditz procurours, en les noms deffusditz seigneurs auditours avantditz, prient que deliverance deue et hastive de ditz gents, ovesque les biens et marchandises ainsi prises et detenues, faites estre faite al admiral du dit roy d'Engleterre, a qui la conifance de ceo appertient de droit, come sicome deffus est dit: ainsi que il saunz destourbance de vous et d'aultres puisse de ceo conifstre et faire ceo que appertient a son office avantdit, et que le dit Monsieur Reymer soit condampne et distreynt a faire deue satisfaction a tous les dites damages, si avaunt come il purra suffire; et en sa defaute, son dit seigneur le roy de Fraunce, par qui il estoit depute al dit office, et que apres deue satisfaction faite as ditz damages, le dit Monsieur Riymer soit si deurement puniz, pour le blemifement de la dite alliance, que la puniffion de luy soit as aultres exemple pour tems avenir. Anno 26. Ed. 1. 1299. Harl. Manusc. 6274. Art. 13.

Tempore

Tempore Ed. 2di. Articuli super quibus iusticiarii Domini nostri regis sunt consulendi.

Item, ad finem quod resumatur, et continuetur, ad subditorum prosecutionem forma procedendi quondam ordinata et inchoata per avum domini nostri regis et ejus consilium, ad retinendum et conservandum antiquam superioritatem maris Angliæ, et ejus officii admirallatus in eodem, quoad corrigendum, interpretandum, declarandum, et conservandum pacem et justitiam inter omnes gentes, nationis cujuscunque, per mare Angliæ transeuntes; et ad cognoscendum super omnibus in contrarium attemptatis in eodem, et ad puniendum delinquentes, et dampna passis satisfaciendum. Quæ quidem leges et statuta per dominum Ricardum, quondam regem Angliæ, in reditu suo a terra sancta correctæ fuerunt, interpretata, declarata et in insula de Oleron publicata et nominata in Gallica lingua. La ley Olyroun.

Pat. 14. Ed. 2. prs. 2. m. 20. dorf.

Memorandum quod cum super damnis hominibus de regni Angliæ, per homines de potestate comitis Flandriæ; et Flandrensis per homines de regno prædicto, a tempore quo dictus noster rex regni sui gubernacula suscepit, hinc inde al-

latis, amicabiliter reformandis; inter consilium dicti domini regis et nuncios dicti comitis in Angliam ex causa prædicta pluries missis plures tractatus habiti fuissent; qui propter aliqua impedimenta quæ intervenerunt, effectum optatum non fortiebantur. Tandem in parlamento dicti domini nostri regis in octavis Sancti Michaelis, anno regni sui 14, apud West. convocato, quidam nuncii dicti comitis venerunt ad tractandum super damnis prædictis, in forma prædicta reformandis. Et cum dicti nuncii ad tractandum de novo super hujusmodi dampnis per dictum nostrum regem admissi fuissent; ipsi nuncii prout alii nuncii præfati comitis in tractatibus supradictis, inter cætera quæ requirebant, ut dictus dominus rex ad sectam suam de potestate sua regia inquire, et justitiam (fieri) faceret, de quadam deprædatione quibusdam hominibus de Flandria nuper de vinis et aliis diversis mercimoniis suis, supra mare Anglicanum versus partes de Cranden, infra potestatem dicti domini nostri regis, per homines de regno Angliæ, ut dicebant facta; asserentes quod vina et mercimonia prædicta, eisdem Flandrensibus deprædata, adducta fuerunt infra regnum et potestatem dicti domini regis; et quod ad ipsum regem pertinuit sic facere, pro eo quod ipse est dominus dicti maris, et deprædatio prædicta facta fuit supra dictum mare, infra potestatem suam. Tandem in eodem parlamento habito super præ-

missis

missis cum prælatis, comitibus, baronibus, et aliis proceribus dicti regni ibidem existentibus tractatu diligenti, de consilio eorundem concordatum fuit per dictum dominum regem, quod pro bono pacis inter subditos terrarum Angliæ et Flandriæ consulendo, dictus dominus rex ex potestate sua regia, illa vice de bonis supra supradictum mare Anglicanum, versus dictum locum de Cranden deprædatis, et infra dictum regnum adductis, in locis ubi malefactores cum bonis sic deprædatis ad dictam terram Angliæ devenerant, per justiciarios suos inquire, et eandem deprædationem audiri faciat et terminari: et quod domini navium, quæ dictæ deprædationi interfuerunt, et alii qui deprædatores illos, cum bonis sic deprædatis in toto vel in parte scienter receptarunt, inde onerentur, et puniantur, sicut participes deprædationis supradictæ. Harl. Manusc. No. 6274.

I shall close this selection of curious matter with inserting one document more, which, if not equally authenticated with many of the others, is at least to the full as curious in its matter and import. I mean only that Sir John Burroughs does not cite the roll and membrane where this ordinance of the second year of king John's reign, A. D. 1200, may be found, but only gives this marginal note, "inter leges marinas manu-

“ scriptas penes dominum Henricum Martin judicem admiralitatis sectione finali.” It is entitled

Ordinance made by king John at Hastings, anno ** of his reign.

Item, ordonne estoit a Hastings, pur lei et costume, en temps du roy John, l'an 2de de son regne, per advys de ses seigneuries temporelles, que si Lieutenant en ascun voyage ordonne par common conseil du royaulme, encountrait sur la mer, ascuns nefes ou vesseaux chargees ou voydes, que ne voulerent avaller et abasser leur trefs au commandement du lieutenant du roy; ou de l'admiral du roy, ou son lieutenant; mais combatent encontre cieulx de la flotte: que si ils puent estre pris, que ils soient reputez come enemys, et leur nefes vessaulx et biens pris et forfaits come biens de enemys; tout soit que les maistres ou possessours d'icelles, bouldroient venir apres, et alleguer meismes les nefes, vessaux et biens, estre biens des amys notre seigneur; et que le mayne estant en ycelles, soient chastiez par imprisonment de leur corps, pour leur rebellette, par discretion. Harl. Manusc. No. 6274.

OF THE
GENERAL STATE
OF THE
NAVY OF ENGLAND.

DURING THE FOURTEENTH CENTURY;

And more particularly of the Naval Armament collected by King Edward the Third, in the nineteenth year of his reign, 1345, for his expedition against Normandy and France : and first of the appointment and succession of the Lord Admirals of England.

THE navy of England was, as far as I have been able to ascertain at present, from the 48th year of King Henry the third, 1263, under the immediate command, direction and superintendence of a single officer of high eminence and distinction, under the title of Admiral of England ; and of his Lieutenant appointed by the king ; until the eighth year of king Edward the Second

1314. In this year occurs the first instance I have yet met with of this appointment having been vested jointly in two officers of eminence, with a divided jurisdiction, equal powers and independent of each other ; under the titles of Admiral of the North of England, (that is, including all the coast and ports from the mouth of the Thames to Scotland;) and secondly, the Admiral of the West, including the Cinque-ports, (these however more immediately under the jurisdiction of the Lord Warden and Constable of Dover Castle,) and all the other ports of the southern and western coasts of England, and the Principality of Wales. This joint appointment to this high office continued, with the few interruptions hereafter specified, throughout this and the succeeding reigns, until the eighth year of Henry 4th. 1406, from which time I find no admirals appointed distinctly, either to the northern or western jurisdiction of the admiralty.

The interruptions I mentioned of this mode of appointing admirals of the north and south are these :

1st, Anno 13. Edw. 2d. 1320, the office of admiral of England was vested solely in William Leyburn, for what continuance of time I cannot ascertain.

2dly, Anno 38. E. 3d. 1364. July 7, Ralph Spigurnell Knt. was appointed admiral as well of the north as of the west ;
and

and anno 43. E. 3d. Nicholas Tamworth, Knt. was appointed admiral of the north, and Sir John Nevill of the west; whether there was any intermediate either sole or joint appointment does not appear from either of the manuscripts I quote from; probably not, as they both purport to give a regular continued series of the appointments to this office, as will appear hereafter, when I come to make out the regular list in series. If there was not, the aforefaid Ralph Spigurnell continued admiral of the northern and western parts of England for five years.

3dly, Anno 10. Richard 2d. 1386. Richard Fitzalan, jun. Earl of Arundel and Surrey, was constituted admiral of England, December 10, and continued so to May 20, anno 12. Rich. 2d.: when John de Beaumont, Baron of Folkingham, was appointed admiral of the north, and John Holland, Earl of Huntindon, on the 13th of May the same year, appointed admiral of the west.

4thly, Anno 12. Rich. 2d. John de Rupibus, Knt. was constituted admiral of England May 31, for one year only; John de Beaumont, Baron de Folkingham, being appointed admiral of the north on the 22d of June, anno 13. Rich. 2d. and John Holland, Earl of Huntindon, admiral of the west, on the same day.

5thly, Anno 15. Rich. 2d. 1391. Edward, Earl of Rutland, &c. eldest son of Edward of Langley Duke of York and Earl of Cambridge, afterwards Duke of Albemarle; was constituted admiral as well of the north as of the western coasts, Nov. 29, and continued so unto May 9, anno 21. R. 2d.

6thly, Anno 21. R. 2d. 1397. John Beaufort Marquis of Dorset and Earl of Somerset, was constituted admiral versus partes tam boreales quem occidentales Angliæ, on the 9th of May, and continued in the same office until the 16th day of January, anno 22. R. 2.

7thly, Anno 22. Ri. 2di 1398. Jan. 16. Thomas Percy Earl of Worcester was constituted admirallus north and south Angliæ et amotus fuit ab officio illo 20. Aprilis anno 2. H. 4ti. in which year Richard Grey, Lord of Codnor, was 20 April constituted admiral of the north, and continued so to Nov. 5, anno 5. H. 4th. and Thomas Remton, Knt. admiral of the west on the same day.

8thly, Anno 6. Hen. 4th. 1404. Thomas of Lancaster filius regis, was constituted admiral of England the 20th of Feb. and continued to the 28th day of April in the following year; and anno 7. H. 4. 1405, Nicolas Blackburn was constituted admiral of the north, and Richard Cliderfon admiral of the west, both on the 28th of April, and so continued until the

23d of December in the following year 1406 ; and these two are the last I find upon record appointed to the distinct jurisdiction of either the northern or the western district of the admiralty.

From the appointment of John Beaufort, Earl of Somerset, dated December 23, anno 8. of Hen. 4th. 1406, the high office of admiral of England was uniformly held sole, and vested (except in one single variation, or perhaps a second, which shall be noted in their places,) in one single person, generally under the title of admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain ; and so continued until the appointment of Charles Howard, Knight of the Garter, Baron of Effingham, dated the 8th day of July, anno 27th of Queen Elizabeth 1585,

In proof and illustration of the premises I proceed to arrange and state a regular series of all the several appointments to this high office which I have hitherto been able to meet with upon record under either mode of administration, joint or sole, from the 48th year of Henry 3d. 1263, to the date last mentioned 1585, including a period of 320 years.. These appointments I have extracted from the Cottonian Manuscripts, Vespasian, c. 14. fol. 1. and 2. Faustina, c. ix. and the three first leaves of Otho, E. ix. blending the three together, and noting the addition or variations of each respectively as I proceed ; and at the same time

time adding occasionally any interesting extracts from other MSS. illustrative of such of the parties only as will not come in to be mentioned with more propriety, when I come to treat hereafter of the military department, and of the army in general. And here let me first premise once for all a single observation, and in which I am confident, upon an attentive perusal and examination of the ensuing list and the following sheets, the reader will concur with me in the same opinion :

It is this, that, during the 14th century, and I believe I might safely add, during nearly the whole of the period above-mentioned ; it does not appear to have been considered as a necessary qualification to this high appointment, or even to the appointment of any of the superior officers of the navy, above the Masters and the Quarter-Masters of the respective ships ; that the Lord Admiral of England, or his Lieutenant ; the Admirals of the north and south, or their Lieutenants ; or even the Captains and Esquires of the several ships respectively ; that they should have been regularly trained up and educated in the sea service by previously having served the regular gradation of the subordinate appointments in the navy ; (as it is now very wisely fixed to be of absolute indispensable necessity to such several promotions and appointments :) but rather Knights or Esquires of tried bravery, experienced conduct, and

and well-approved renown in arms indifferently, in either the sea or land service ; many of the latter perhaps called to the command of ships, if not fleets ; without ever having served at all at sea before. All Knights, Esquires, and soldiers, when serving on shipboard, still retaining always the same establishment and pay, distinct and different from the Masters and Mariners, as the Landmen ; and having little or no concern with the working the way, or management of the ship. At least, I am inclined to conjecture so from the following list of appointments to the office of admirals of England, where the reader will find a great number of most respectable names, whom he will see at the first glance, could not have been bred up, trained, and regularly accustomed to the sea service, previously to their respective appointments ; and a great number and variety of circumstances and facts adduced in the ensuing pages, to confirm and strengthen him in the same opinion.

Since the arrangement of the following list I have been lucky enough to recover an admiral of England of an earlier date, and take the liberty of inserting him in his place, without farther apology or alteration.

1. Anno 15. H. 3d. 1231. Petrus de Rival Capitanius Pictaviæ, habet ad totam vitam suam custodiam omnium portuum et totius marinæ Angliæ, cum omnibus libertatibus et liberis consuetudinibus ad prædictorum portuum et marinæ custodiam

diam pertinentibus, excepto portu de Dovre qui est in custodia Huberti de Burgo per cartam regis datam per manum regis apud Nortwiche, die Junii viceffimo octavo, Harl. MSS. 6194. p. 71.

Of this Peter de Rival I know no more at present except that in the month following he was appointed Treasurer of England and Chamberlain of the Exchequer at Woodstock, July 26, anno 15. H. 3. 1231, as appears in the same page of the manuscript last referred to; and the only trace of the name I find in that or the following reigns are in the fifteenth part of the escheats of king Henry the Third. Mabile Ryvall held the manors of Stokewell and Peratt, in Somersetshire. Claudius, c. 10. p. 19.

2. Anno 48. Hen. 3d. 1263. Thomas de Moleton was constituted Admiral of England the 3d day of June, cujus litteræ patentés hæ fuerunt.

Omnibus baronibus et ballivis quinque portuum, et omnibus †
* * * * * in partibus maritimis, salutem.

† It is much to be lamented that the tops of the leaves of this curious and valuable MSS. as well as of several others of the Cottonian collection, have been destroyed by the fire, and some parts torn, perished and illegible in other MSS. In this and all other similar cases hereafter, the reader will observe that this mark * denotes that the syllable, line, or sentence are perished or absolutely illegible; and where I think myself warranted to supply upon conjecture any hiatus of a syllable, word, line, or paragraph, I shall subjoin these dotted marks (.) to such parts so supplied as above.

Sciatis quod assignavimus dilectum et fidelem nostram Thomam de Moleton capitaneum et custodem maris et partium maritimarum, et ad naves nostras vino, victu, **** et aliis necessariis muniendas, contra hostilem adventum alienigenorum in regnum nostrum prout magis viderit expedire : et vobis mandamus quod eidem Thomæ tanquam capitaneo et custodi, intendentes fitis et auxiliantes.

Teste rege apud cantuariam tertio die Junii, anno regni sui 48. Otho, E. 9.

I am strongly inclined to believe that the above-named Sir Thomas Moleton possessed in right of his wife (or if he is the second of the name mentioned in the pedigree in right of his mother) Amabilla, with her sister and co-heir Alicia, daughters of Richard de*** (the surname not mentioned) third son and heir of Amabilla, the youngest of the children, and surviving heir of William, son of Doncan Baron de Cockermouth, and of Alicia Domina de Skipton in comitatu Ebor, his wife, tempore H. 2. For in an ancient but imperfect pedigree in Harl. MSS. 294. p. 18. I find that William, son of Doncan Baron of Cockermouth and Alice, his wife, Domina de Skipton, left one son, William, who died without issue, and three daughters; Cæcilia and Alicia, who both died without issue, and Amabilla, who married and had issue, William and Reginald, who died

C

without

mini Gulielmi de Leborne Admiralli maris dicti Regis fuit ordinatum in perpetuum, &c. Otho, E. ix.

This William Leyborn married Alice, sole daughter and heir of Robert Toney, Knt. Baron Toney, in whose right, anno 3. Ed. 2d. he held the manor of Walthamstow in Essex, as of the Barony of Toney, vide Esch. Harl. MSS. 640. p. 20. He left Thomas de Leyborn, his son and heir, who died anno 35. E. 1st. and escheated for possessions in Kent, Essex, &c. leaving one sole daughter and heir, Juliana de Leyborn. Vide Harl. MSS. 294. p. 52.

The which Juliana de Leyborn died within a few years after, either unmarried or at least without issue. For it appears that the aforesaid Alice de Toney, wife of William de Leyborn, and mother of the afore-mentioned Juliana de Leyborn, married afterwards Guy Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, by whom she had Thomas Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick; and in which house, in her right, the manor of Walthamstow in Essex, and the other possessions of the barony of Toney vested, as appears from the following extract from an escheat, anno 9. Edw. 2d. an. Dni. 1316. Guy Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, held the manor of Walthamstow in Essex of the inheritance of Alice, his late wife, per legem Angliæ, of the king, as of the Barony of Toney, and that Thomas Beauchamp is his son and heir. Vide Harl. MSS. 640. p. 23.

4. Admiral of the west, anno 34. E. 1. 1306. Gernafius Alard constituitur Admirallus versus partes occidentales die quinto Junii.

5. Ad. north. Edwardus Barles admirallus versus partes boreales.

6. Eodem die Robertus de Leyborn occidentalis. Vespasian, c. 14. p. 1. but no year or month named.

7. Admiral north. Johannes Botetortus constituitur admirallus ab ore Thamisis usque partes boreales Angliæ quarto die Martii, anno 8. regis Edwardi 2di. 1315. Otho, c. ix.

8. Adm. west. Gulielmus Crains constituitur admirallus ab ore Thamisis versus partes occidentales nono die Maii, anno 8. regis Ed. 2di.

I have not been able to find the least trace of this name in any of the escheat books I have yet had an opportunity of consulting: nor of the name of John de Bottetort, unless it be the same person with John de Bottecort, who died anno 18. Ed. 2d. 1325. possessed of the manor of Beauchamp Otes in Essex, and of Dibwick manor, Malton manor, half the manor of Rouhale, a part of Kirdington, and Bromham in the county of Bedford, in the right of his wife, one of the three daughters and co-heirs of Thomas Fitz Otho baron of Bedford, who died anno 10. Ed. 1st. 1282. held of the king as a third part of the barony of Bedford. Vide Harl. MSS. 321. p. 9. and 177.

But

But upon looking over the volume of the manuscript catalogue of an invaluable treasure of detached ancient original charters, grants, &c. digested in series, and compiled to the extent of two large volumes in folio, by the diligent care and attention of the Rev. Mr. Ayscough, and which volumes the Governors and Trustees of the British Museum have already obliged the public with the use of, I have been able to find traces of the name, and am inclined to think it was of the same John de Botetorte that was appointed admiral of the north as above, and that he died before the first year of king Edward the Third, possessed of the manor of Great Bradley and two water-mills, cum prato et pastura, &c. in Halsted in the county of Essex, and that by his wife Matilda he left one daughter and heir, married to Thomas, son of Thomas Lord Botetorte. Vide Ayscough's MSS. catalogue, v. 1. No. 47. F. 11, 12, 13, 14, and 15.

9. Adm. west. anno 10. E. 2d. Nicolaus Criolus constituitur admirallus ab ore aquæ Thamisis versus partes occidentales Angliæ, octavo die Decembris, anno 10. Ed. 2di. 1316. Otho, E. ix. *N. B.* In Vespasian, c. 14. the name is Nicholas Kyriell, the date of appointment the same day, and therefore most probably the same person meant in both.

10. Adm.

10. Adm. north, anno 10. E. 2d. * * * . . . burnus . . .
rgensis * * * * * . . . enemouth constituitur admirallus ab
ore aquæ Tamisis versus partes boreales Angliæ, 13. die Maii
1317. Otho E. ix.

Most probably the name, &c. to be supplied here is Johannes
Perburnus burgenfis villæ magnæ Yernemouth, who was
appointed admiral of the northern coasts in the sixteenth
year of this reign, and most probably too the same in the 13.
E. 2d.

I can find no trace of Nicholas Crioll in the escheat books,
unless he was of the family of Bertrand de Crioll, who
jointly with Petronilla, his wife, held possessions in the counties
of Kent and Herts, an. 34. Ed. 1. 1306, and left Petro-
nilla, their sole daughter and heir, who married Sir Richard
Rokesley, Knt. Harl. MSS. 294. p. 51.

But I find in Mr. Ascough's manuscript catalogue, Vol. 1.
No. 49. A. 6. the following trace of this name, that Nicho-
las Crioll, Knt. passed anno 18. E. 1. a grant of conveyance
to Guy Ferre, junior, of the manor of Benhale in Suffolk,
with all its manerial rights, the advowsons of the priorys of
Buttele and Leystone, and all the houses, rents, free and vil-
lenage services, wards, reliefs, scutages, escheats, marriages,
suits of court, knights fees, &c. with a seal, but no date.

Item

Item, a grant from Nicholas Crioll to Adam de Couling of a tenement in Hinton, without a feal, and no date. No. 49. A. 6. and 7. -

With regard to the name Kyriell, as wrote in Vespasian, c. 14. I find that John Kyriell obtained licence to enkernell his manor house of Westing Hanger, Kent, an. 17. E. 3d. See Harl. MSS. 5163, and that Nicholas Kyriell was enfeofed in the manor of Stokebury, in Kent, for the benefit of William Kyriell and Elizabeth, his wife, the daughter of Nicholas Kyriell, anno 1. H. 5th. 1413. and that Thomas was son and heir of the aforefaid William. See Harl. MSS. 640. ad ann. There is besides in Vespasian, c. 14. another variation in the appointment of the admiral for the west, who does not mention John Perbruns's appointment at all, nor indeed any other, until the sixteenth year of Ed. 2d. 1322.

11. Anno 10. E. 2d. Robert de Leyborn, admiral of the west, December 8, the same day. Nicholas Kyriell's appointment is not dated until May 12, anno sequenti, six months after, and therefore probably both appointments did really take place, and the latter superseded the first. Vespasian, c. 14.

12. Admiral of England, anno 13. Ed. 2d. Robertus Laburnus eques auratus constituitur admirallus c*****

portus

portus regni Angliæ, Walliæ, et Hiberniæ, 19. die Maii, anno 13. Ed. 2d. 1320. Otho, E. ix.

I am strongly inclined to believe that this Robert Laborne was either younger son or of the family of Roger Leyborn, who died anno 11. E. 1. 1283, possessed of Tykhill, Kimberworth, Maltby, Osterfield and Doncaster manors and Barstree vill in Yorkshire, and which possessions he held of the inheritance of Idonia, his wife, daughter and co-heir of Robert de Veteri Ponte, and left John de Leiburn his son and heir. See Claudius c. xii. p. 13. The which John probably died anno 22. E. 3. 1347. holding with his other possessions two parts of the manors of Hurburton and Brixham, in the county of Devon, de rege in capite by barony, as parcel of the barony de Valle torta. See Claudius c. xii. p. 114.

10th. Adm. north, anno 16. Ed. 2. 1323. Johannes Perburnus burgenfis villæ magnæ Yernemouth constitutus erat admirallus ab ore aquæ Tamifis versus partes boreales Angliæ 16. die Maii, anno 16 regis Edwardi 2di.

11th. Adm. west. Robertus Butallers unus baronum, quinque portuum, constituitur admirallus ab ore aquæ Tamifis versus partes occidentales, 18. die Aprilis, anno 16. regis Ed. 2di. prs. 2d. Pat. Mem. 21. Otho E. 9.

In the Cottonian MSS. *Vespasian*, c. 14. the latter is styled Robert Batayl, admiral of the west, April 18 ; but the same person is evidently meant in both.

Of Robert Perburn I have not yet found any trace in the escheats or ancient MSS. Robert Butallers or Batayl I conjecture to have been younger son or relation of Taer Battaylle, who died an. 20. Ed. 1. 1292, seized of lands in Bradwell, Lachendon, and Purley, in the county of Essex, and left Edward his son heir. Harl. MSS. 640. p. 12.

In *Vespasian*, c. 14, there is only one single appointment mentioned until the first year of Edward the Third, and that is, Robert London appointed admiral of the west, but no year or day of the month named of this appointment, if it ever took place.

In *Otho*, E. ix. the next appointment is,

12th. Adm. west. anno 1325. 18. E. 2. Johannes Sturmius constituitur admirallus ab ore Thamisis versus partes boreales Angliæ, quinto die Augusti, anno 18. R. Ed. 2.

13th. Adm. north, Robertus Bendonius constitutus erat admirallus, &c. versus partes occidentales, 5. Aug. *Otho*, E. ix.

I find no trace of either of these names except that in 1311, anno 5. Ed. 2. a William Sturmy died seized of considerable possessions in Yorkshire, but no farther particulars.

Vide

Vide Claudius, c. xii. p. 33. Possibly the afore-mentioned John Sturmy might have been his son or of the same family.

Anno 1. E. 3. 1327, from Vespasian, c. 14.

14. Adm. Walerius de Vagnors, admiral of the west, April 21. anno 1. E. 3.

15. Adm. Thomas Perbran of the north.

16. Anno 7. E. 3. 1333, William de Clinton, admiral of the west, appointed July 16. Vespasian, c. 14.

In the Harleian Manuscript, 7371, p. 26. containing a regular series of the creations of the nobility during this and other reigns, it is mentioned that this William Fines Lord Clinton, afterwards created Earl of Huntindon, anno 9. E. 3. was made admiral of England, anno 12. E. 3. No such appointment is mentioned in either of the three lists I extract from; but distinct appointments for the northern and western district given in Vespasian, c. 14. and Otho, E. ix. which names though spelled differently evidently mean the same persons. If therefore this sole appointment existed at all it must have been for this year the 7th of Edward the Third, as I observe there is no appointment inserted of the admirals this year, except in Vespasian, c. 14. and there a vacant space is left for the insertion of the admiral of the north for that year. I

shall defer the particular account of this nobleman until I come to treat of the army.

17. Anno 8. E. 3. 1335. Johannes Norvicius constituitur admirallus ab ore Tamisis versus partes boreales Angliæ secundo die Januarii, anno octavo regis Edwardi tertii.

18. Rogerus de Legham constituitur admirallus ab ore Tamisis versus partes occidentales Angliæ secundo die Januarii, anno 8. R. Ed. 3. Otho, E. ix. of whom no trace; with respect to John de Norwich. I apprehend he is the same person to whom king Edward the Third grants the following licence to embattle or erect into castles his manor-houses of Mettingham, Blackworth, and Lingen, from Index literarum patentium regis Edwardi tertii, anno 16. concessa Johanni de Norwich, Licentia Kernellare mansa maneriorum suorum de Mittingham, Suffex, et de Blackworth et Lingen in comitatu Norfolciæ. Harl. Manuscr. 5163. ad an.

19. Anno 10. E. 3. 1336. Thomas Rotridus constituitur admirallus ab ore aquæ Tamisis versus partes occidentales Angliæ octodecimo die Februarii, anno decimo regis Edwardi tertii. Otho, E. ix.

20. Johannes Norwicius constituitur admirallus versus partes boreales, 18. die Februarii, &c. Otho, E. ix.

Anno 36. E. 3. that I find farther from the escheat books one John de Norwich held the manor of Sculthorpe in Norfolk. Claudius, c. x. p. 147.

Anno 48. E. 3. Margareta de Norwich for the term of her life of the inheritance of John de Norwich, knight, the manors of Bradfield and Dalam, and that the same John is her heir.

Anno 48. Ed. 3. John de Norwich, Knt. the manor of Sculthorpe in Norfolk, and that Catherine Brewes is next of kin and heir. Claudius, c. x. p. 173.

21. In the same year of king Edward the Third's reign, Galfredus Stains Bannerettus constituitur admirallus ab ore aquæ Tamifis versus partes occidentales Angliæ, decimo diē Aprilis, anno decimo regis Edwardi tertii. Otho, E. ix.

22. Anno 11. Ed. 3. Sir Bartholomew de Burghershe, Knt. admiral of the west, no date. 1337. no date of the appointmēt.

23. Sir Walter de Manny, Knt. admiral of the north. Vespasian, c. 14.

In Otho, E. ix. the dates of both these appointments are on the eleventh of August. Of these great and brave knights, and indeed of most of the following names, I shall reserve what I have to say in particular, until I come to treat of the military armament.

Anno

Anno 12. E. 3. Peter Bard*, admiral of the west, July 28, 1338.

Anno 12. E. 3. Thomas de Trayston, of the north, July 28. Vespasian, c. 14. but both names varied in the other manuscript.

¶ Anno 12. E. 3. Thomas Drayton versus partes portus borealis, die 28 Julii.

Anno 12. E. 3. Petrus Dardus versus partes occidentales, die 28 Julii. Otho, E. ix.

Here it is observable there is a very material alteration in both the names, and yet, from the unity of the date of each appointment, it is evident they were intended to express one individual, and not a double appointment to each office within the same year; and as Otho, E. ix. appears to me of unquestionable authenticity, as a collection of original admiralty office papers, some of them having autograph signatures of the principal officers there. I am clearly satisfied that Sir Thomas Drayton, and probably Sir Peter Dard were the real names of the persons respectively appointed to each admiralty district. Of the first I have not recovered any trace, with respect to the second.

* Sir Peter Bard of this name I only found that a Robert Bard held two Carucates of land in Haslarton, Yorkshire, anno 12. E. 1. Claudius, c. xii. p. 33. and that a Durande Barde held lands in Bucks, William his son and heir, anno 21. E. 3. Claudius, c. x. p. 112.

Sir Thomas Drayton was probably a descendant of Baldwyn de Drayton, who, anno 6. E. 1. held by great serjeancy of the king in capite the capital messuage of Drayton, a vineyard, two dove-houses, a mill, six virgates of land, in Drayton and Ilip, Northamptonshire, by the service of finding at his own charges unum servientem for forty days, when and as often as the king shall be present with his army. Harl. MSS. 821. p. 38.

24. An. 13. Ed. 3. 1339. Robertus Morley eques auratus versus partes borealis, die octodecimo Februarii, an. 13. regis Ed. 3. tii.

25. Gulielmus Trussell, eq. aur. versus partes occidentales, 18. Feb. anno 13. regis Ed. 3. Otho, E. ix.

26. *N. B.* In the manuscript, Vespasian, c. 14. after having given the two last appointments exactly in purport as above, there is inserted Galfredus Dominus de Say (which is not to be found in Otho, E. ix.) but no date at all named, or to which division appointed; if any such appointment actually took place, it was probably vice Sir William Trussell for the western district of the admiralty, as Sir Robert Morley continued admiral of the north for the two succeeding years, according to Otho, E. ix. and for the three following years, according to this manuscript.

With regard to the above-mentioned Galfredus Dominus Say, he was the lineal descendant and successor in the barony
to

to William de Say, created Lord Say, in king John's reign. He died before the twentieth year of Edward the Third; then it appears his son William Lord Say held under the king the barony of Mammoth, which rendered the service of twenty-four knights fees to the ward of the castle of Dover. Vide Harl. Manusc. 7376. I have not found the account of the death or his possessions, except his wife Matilda who survived to the forty-third of Edward the Third, as appears from the following escheat.

Anno 43. Ed. 3. Matilda, late wife of Galfred de Saye, held in dower the manors of Berlings and Burghe, with the appurtenances in Kent, and that William de Saye is their son and heir. Harl. Manusc. 708. ad ann.

The above Galfred de Say was summoned as a baron to parliament, anno 7th. Ed. 2. 1313. Vide Harl. Manusc. 708, p. 104.

27. Rot. Alem. 14. & 24. anno 14. Ed. 3. Richard Earl of Arundel, admiral of the west, Feb. 20. 1340.

28. Robert de Morley, admiral of the north, March 10. Vespasian, c. 14.

In Manusc. Otho, E. ix. It is Richard, son of Allan Earl of Arundel, admiral of the west, and no appointment to the north at all named for this or the following year.

Anno

29. Anno 15. E. 3. William de Clinton, Earl of Huntingdon, admiral of the west, January 12. 1341.

30. Robert de Morley, admiral of the north, April 1. Vespasian, c. 14.

31. Anno 16. E. 3. Johannes de Monte Gonrico, admiral of the west, no date named, 1342.

32. Robert de Morley, admiral of the north, no date named. Vespasian, c. 14.

33. 1. prs. pat. Franc. m. 21. anno 17. E. 3. Robert Leopil, of the west, December 20, 1344. anno 16. E. 3. Otho.

34. 1343. William de Ruffell [Truffel Otho] admiral of the north, December 20, anno 16. E. 3. Vespasian, c. 14.

35. 1. prs. pat. m. 8. anno 18. E. 3. Reginald de Cobham, admiral of the west, May 8, 1344.

36. Robert de Ufford, Earl of Suffolk, admiral of the north, May 8. Otho, E. ix.

37. Anno 19. E. 3. Richard Earl of Arundel, admiral of the west, February 23. Vespasian, c. 14.

38. 1345. 1. prs. pat. Franc. m. 35. [Robert Earl of Suffolk, of the north. Vide Harl. Manusc. 4586. p. 212.]

39. Anno 21. E. 3. 1346. John de Montgomery, admiral of the west, February 25.

40. 1. prs. Franc. m. 31. and 35. John de Howard, of the north, March 8. Vespasian, c. 14. but in Otho, E. ix. John de Morle is named as admiral of the north, February 23.

41. Anno 22. E. 3. Reginald de Cobham, of the west, May 14.

42. 1347. 1. prs. Franc. m. 15. Walter de Manny, of the north, May 14. Vespasian, c. 14.

N. B. In Otho, E. ix. the addition to W. de Manny, of Baro de Sancto Salvatore.

43. Anno 23. E. 3. Reginald de Cobham, of the west, February 14.

44. Robert Morley, of the north, June 6. Otho, E. ix. which is not mentioned in Vespasian, c. 14.

45. An. 24. E. 3. 1349. Robertus Caustonius ad partes boreales.

46. Rot. Franc. m. 15. Johannes de Beauchamp, frater Thomitis de Warwick constituitur admirallus versus occidentales partes Angliæ, no date. Otho, E. ix.

47. Anno 25. E. 3. William Bohun, Earl of Northampton, admiral of the north, March 8.

William de Bohun was the fourth son to Humphry de Bohun the eighth of that name, Earl of Hereford and Essex, and constable of England, was created Earl of Northampton by
king

king Edward the Third, in the eleventh year of his reign, 1338, and in the year - - - of the same reign, he was elected a Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, into stall the seventh, on the sovereign's side, after the death of Sir Hugh Courtney, a founder. Harl. Manuscript, No. 234. p. 106.

After the death of his elder brother John, who died without issue, anno 10. Ed. 3, and of Humphry, his second brother, who died without issue, anno 37. Ed. 3. he was Earl of Hereford and Essex, Lord of Brecknock, and constable of England.

He married Eleanore, one of the daughters and heirs of Bartholomew Baddlesmere, Lord of Lides, and had issue Humphry de Bohun, Earl of Hereford, Essex and Northampton, Lord of Brecknock and constable of England, who died in the forty-seventh year of king Edward the Third, and had issue two daughters and heirs; first, Alianore, who was fourteen years of age, in the first year of king Richard the Second, and in the fifth year of his reign married to Thomas Plantagenet, Earl of Buckingham, and afterwards created Duke of Gloucester. The second daughter and co-heir, Mary, in the first year of Richard the Second, aged nine years, and four years after married to Henry Plantagenet, Earl of Derby,

afterwards king of England, by the name of Henry the Fourth. Vide Harl. Manusc. 7371. p. 26.

The above William de Bohune, Earl of Northampton, Hereford and Essex, &c. married afterwards Elizabeth - - - who survived him thirteen years.

Anno 47. E. 3. Elizabeth, late wife of William de Bohun, Earl of Northampton, and that Edmund Mortimer, Earl of Marche, is her heir. Claudius, c. x. p. 195.

He died, anno thirty-fourth of Edward the Third, 1361, and held at the time of his death the castle and lordship of Ockham, in Northamptonshire; three parts of Thaxted manor, in Essex; two parts of Grantham, Lincolnshire; the manors of Rochford and Foulness, Essex; the manor of Tonge, in Kent; the manor of Ascot, in Oxfordshire; and the manor of Knefale, in the county of Nottingham. Claudius, c. x. ad ann.

From Harl. Manusc. 5193. p. 53, anno 34. E. 3. it appears this Earl held besides possessions at his death in the counties of Bucks, Dorset, Berks, Surrey, and Rutland. Vide esch. Claudius, c. x. p. 195. This same Elizabeth, Countess of Northampton, held besides, at her death, anno 47. E. 3. the manor of Arley, and the castle and lordship of Kettlees, in Staffordshire, and the cantred of Mylenes in Wales, and a third part of the manor of Crowden, in Buckinghamshire. Claudius, c. 10. p. 131.

I shall

I shall reserve what I have to produce of this great character Henry Earl of Derby, Duke of Lancaster, until I come to treat of the military department.

48. 1350. Henry of Lancaster, of the west, March 8. Otho, E. ix. no appointment for the north.

49. 1351. Anno 26. E. 3. Thomas Beauchamp, senior, Earl of Warwick, admiral of the west, but no date, nor other appointment until

50. 1354. Anno 29. E. 3. Robert Morley eques auratus baron de Hengham, March 5, admiral of the north. Otho, E. ix.

51. John de Beauchamp, brother of Thomas Earl of Warwick, admiral of the west, March 5.

52. Anno 34. E. 3. 1360. John de Beauchamp of Warwick, son of Guy Earl of Warwick, deceased, and brother of Thomas de Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, senior, was constituted *admirallus versus partes tam boreales quam occidentales regni Angliæ*, die Julii 18, anno 34. E. 3. but he died the second day of December following, and lies buried in the nave of St. Paul's church, between the two pillars on the eastern side, *ut nunc videre plane liquet*. Faustina, c. ix.

To the same account verbatim is added in the Cottonian manuscript, Otho, E. ix. that this John de Beauchamp was at the same time Warden of the Cinque Ports
and

and Constable of the Tower of London and of Dover Castle. John de Beauchamp was one of the five sons of Guy de Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, the son of William de Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, by Matilda, his wife, the relict of Gerard de Furnival, Lord of Hallumshire, who died anno 26th of Edward the First, anno 1298. Harl. Manusc. 640, p. 15.

Guy de Beauchamp married Alice sole daughter and heir of Robert de Toney and relict of William Leiburne, as was before observed. He left five sons, The first, Thomas de Beauchamp, the next Earl of Warwick. The second, Walter de Beauchamp, who died anno 43. E. 3. 1370. whose heir was, a third son, William, his brother, as appears from the following escheat.

Anno 43. Ed. 3. *Walterus de Beauchamp nulla tenuit de hæreditate nec de hærede Guidonis Beauchamp, sed idem Walterus aliquando fuit seifitus de manerio de Alyncestre (in co. Warwic.) in fædo, et illud dedit Ægidio de bello campo fratri suo habendum sibi et hæredibus suis; et illud manerium tenetur de Reginaldo filio Petri per servitium militare per dimidium fædi militis et Willielmus de Beauchamp frater dicti Walteri ætatis quadraginta annorum est hæres.* Harl. Manusc. 5193. p. 40.

4th son, Gyles de Beauchamp, who died the twelfth of October, in the thirty-fifth year of king Edward the Third, 1362, seized

feized of the manors of Powyk and Acton Beauchamp, in the county of Worcester, of the grant of Thomas de Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, his brother, held by knight's service, and left John de Beauchamp, aged twenty-three years, his son and next heir. See the escheat, Harl. Manusc. 5193. p. 12.

From this branch descended John Beauchamp, created baron Beauchamp of Powyk, in Henry the Sixth's reign, and from his eldest daughter and co-heir, married to Greville the present Earl of Warwick. Before I return to the fifth son, John de Beauchamp the admiral of England, I shall just mention that his father Guy de Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, died the ninth year of king Edward the Second, 1315, (Vide Harl. Manusc. 640. p. 23.) seized, exclusive of his possessions in Warwickshire and other counties, of fifteen manors and twenty-two knights fees, in Yorkshire, which are particularly specified and recited in Claudius, c. xii. p. 37.

Sir John de Beauchamp, anno 19. E. 3. was created a knight, founder of the most noble order of the Garter, and seated in stall the sixth on the sovereign's side. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 285.

I have not been able to find whether he ever married or left any issue. He was constable of the Tower of London and of Dover-Castle, and Warden of the Cinque Ports, at the time
of

of his death, (Otho, E. ix.) which happened on the second day of December, in the same year of his appointment to the admiralty, and died seized of the manor of Brokenbury, within the New Forest, in the county of Southampton. Claudius, c. x. p. 153.

53. Anno 35. E. 3. 1362. Robertus Herle eques auratus at the death of John de Beauchamp was constituted admiral of the northern and western coasts of the kingdom of England, and likewise constable of Dover Castle, and Warden of the Cinque Ports, the twenty-sixth of January, in the thirty-fifth year of king Edward the Third, for the term of his life, and continued to hold the same offices until the fifth day of July, in the thirty-eighth year of that reign, when he died. Faustina, c. ix.

This Sir Robert Herle, knight, was either son or immediate heir and successor in the mediety of the barony of Bolbeck to William Herle, who died circ. anno 21. Ed. 3d. Willielmus Herle (tenuit) medietatem baroniæ de Bolbeck. Claudius, c. x. p. 111.

I have not found any particulars of his marriage, children, or heirs; but the following escheats ascertain the time of his death and his possessions minutely.

Anno

Anno 38. Ed. 3. Robertus de Herle miles tenuit in co. Leiceſt.

Anno 38. Ed. 3. Robertus Herle miles medietatem bāroniæ de Bolbeck de rege in capite, ut de corona, in dominico ſuo ut de ſœdo, per ſervitium medietatis unius baroniæ; videlicet manerium et villam de Styford et villam de Shotley ac manerium de Bromhalgh et villam de Shaveley ac manerium de Kirkherle in comitatu Northumbriæ de rege in capite, ut de baronia prædicta.

Item tenuit medietatem manerii de Coton in comitatu Norfolciæ. Claudius, c. x. p. 151.

54. Anno 38. E. 3. 1364. Ralph Spigurnell. Fauſtina, c. ix. admirallus verſus partes boreales et occidentales Angliæ, die ſeptimo Julii, anno 38. Ed. 3tū. Otho, E. ix.

I find no trace of this name in the eſcheat books earlier than Edward Spigurnell, from whom this Ralph was probably a deſcendant by a younger branch, who died anno 24. E. 1. poſſeſſed of the manor of Standone in Eſſex, and left John, his ſon, immediate heir. Harl. Manuſc. 640. p. 14. The which John died poſſeſſed of Sandone manor, anno 2. E. 2d. 1308, and left Edward, his ſon and immediate heir to that manor. Harl. Manuſc. 640. p. 20.

The which Edward died poſſeſſed of Staindon manor, with its appurtenances, in Eſſex, anno 8. E. 2. 1314. and left his

son John immediate heir, Manusc. 640. p. 22. The said Edward, at his death, held also of the king in capite by homage and 4l. 4s. 4d. rent per annum, a messuage, mill and five bovates of land in Sheggeby, Nottinghamshire; and also a certain assurt of the king by service of twelve pence per annum. Harl. Manusc. 821. p. 275. The aforementioned John, Edward's eldest son, it appears by another escheat, dated the same year, anno 8. Ed. 2. left Joanna his sole daughter and heir. Harl. Manusc. 294. p. 58.

55. Anno 43. Ed. 3. 1369. Nicholas Tamworth eques auratus. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituitur admirallus versus partes boreales, Junii 12, anno 43. E. 3. Otho, E. 9.

56. Robertus Aston eques auratus. (Faustina, c. 14.) admirallus versus partes occidentales, die Aprilis viceffimo octavo, anno 43. E. 3. Otho, E. ix.

I find no trace of the name of Tamworth, nor yet of Robert Aston, Knt. unless he was of the family of John Aston, who enfeoffed Roger Bigodde, in Thornton, juxta Pickering manor, held of the king, anno 22. Ed. 1. 1294. Vide Claudius, c. xii. p. 18.

57. Anno 44. E. 3. 1370. Johannes Neville. Faustina, c. 14. Johannes Neville eques auratus baro de Raby constituitur admirallus

mirallus versus partes boreales tertio die Maii, anno 44. E. 3. Otho, E. ix.

58. Guido Brianus. Faustina, c. 14.

Guido Brianus eques auratus baro de constituitur admirallus versus partes occidentales tricesimo die Maii, anno 44. Edwi. tertii. Otho, E. ix.

This John Neville, Knt. baron of Raby, was father of Realph de Neville, the first Earl of Westmoreland of that name ; and was himself descended lineally from Gilbert Lord Neville, born in Normandy, and who came over with William the Conqueror, and was his admiral. Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 7371. p. 9. and from the following article in the same manuscript, it appears that Robert Lord Neville, of Brantsperth, a descendant of the above named Gilbert Lord Neville of Normandy, married the heir general of Ostrowed, brother to Waltheof Earl of Northumberland, whose father Segrave, in the right of his wife Alfreda, the daughter and co-heir of Aldred, Earl of Northumberland, became Earl of Northumberland and was Earl of Cumberland by inheritance. Aysc. Cat. Manusc. 18. c. 17. p. 12. and the abovenamed Ostrowed, second son of Segrave and brother of Waltheoph, Earl of Northumberland, was in the conquest time Lord of Raby,

the which barony vested by that marriage in the house of Neville, and remains in the Earls of Westmoreland of that name.

I find the following note inserted in an ancient pedigree of the Nevilles. Harl. Manusc. 154. p. 42. which I recite merely upon its own authority, as it contains some curious particulars of the history of this brave knight. John Neville was a valiant captain and warred against the Turks. He was the king's lieutenant in Gascony, in the last year of king Edward the Third, 1377, which country being destroyed by the French, he recovered and strengthened with eighty-three walled towns, &c. whereof he found few or none at his coming.

His father was Ralph de Neville, Lord of Raby, as appears from the following extract from Harl. Manusc. 294. p. 10.

From Rot. Scot. anno 4. H. 4. m. 19. Ralph de Neville, Lord of Raby, had a son, John de Neville, who had a son, Ralph de Neville, Earl of Westmoreland, fratrem regis Henrici quarti, that is, from his having married Maud, daughter of John Plantagenet surnamed of Ghent, Duke of Lancaster, and sister of Henry Earl of Derby, created Duke of Hereford afterwards by king Henry 4.

From the following extract from Harl. Manusc. 234, it appears that this Lord Neville of Raby, the king's lieutenant in Gascony,

Gascony, named there erroneously Thomas; but by his proper addition John Neville, in Manusc. 18. c. 17: was elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter into the fifth stall on the prince's side, after the death of Sir Bartholomew Burghersh, a founder, in the twenty-ninth year of king Edward the Third; and he died in the tenth year of king Richard the Second, and he lyeth buried in the college of Durham. Harl. Manusc. 234. p. 104.

From the ancient pedigree of the Neville family above referred to, Harl. Manusc. 154. p. 42. it appears that this Sir John Neville, Lord of Raby, married to his first wife Maude, daughter of the elder Henry Percy, by whom he had issue two sons and three daughters; first, Ralph de Neville, or as he is sometimes called Dan Raby, Lord Raby after his father, and afterwards Earl of Westmoreland, of whom and of whose succession I shall speak more particularly when I come to treat hereafter of the military department. Secondly, Alicia, married to Lord Deyncourt. Thirdly, Maude, married to William Scrope. Fourthly, Aleanor, married to Ra. Lumley. Fifthly, Thomas, his second son, who became Lord Furnival in right of his wife Maude, daughter and heir of William Lord Furnival.

He

He also married to his second wife Katherine *, daughter and heir of William Lord Latimer of Danby, and by whom he had also one son and one daughter, viz. sixth, his third son John de Neville, in his mother's right Lord Latimer, who married Maud, daughter of ----- Posford, and left no issue. Seventhly, Elizabeth, sister and heir to John Lord Latimer, her brother, who married Robert Lord Willoughby of Eresby. Harl. Manusc. 154. p. 42.

This John de Neville, baron of Raby, died anno 12. Ri. 2. as appears from the following escheat.

Anno 12. Richard the Second, John Neville de Raby, Knt. held, at the time of his death, Clavering manor in Yorkshire. Ralph de Neville, Knt. his son and heir.

Item, he held different manors and possessions in the county of Buckingham, Northumberland, Cambridge and London, in dominico suo.

Item, he held jointly in right of Elizabeth, his wife, different manors in Bedfordshire, as parcel of the barony of Bedford, that is, one-fourth of the said barony.

* The name should have been Elizabeth, as appears from the following escheat. Anno 4. Ri. 2d. 1380. Wilhelmus Latymer miles tenuit villam de Hamelfly cum Unthank Hamlett ejusdem villæ; quodque Elizabetha uxor Johannis de Neville domini de Raby est filia et hæres ætatis 24 annorum. Harl. Manusc. Claudius, c. 10. p. 192.

Item,

Item, in right of Elizabeth, his wife, the manors of Danby, Thornton, Pickering, Shrives Hoton and Sutton in Galtris, within the county of York. Claudius, c. x. p. 218.

59. Anno 45. E. 3. 1371. Radulphus Ferrars eques auratus admirallus versus partes boreales (Faustina) die sexto Octobris, anno 45. Edi. 3ⁱⁱ. Otho, E. ix.

60. Robertus Aston eques auratus versus partes occidentales. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituitur octavo die Octobris. Otho, E. ix.

61. Anno 46. E. 3. 1372. William Neville, Knt. admiral of the north. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituitur die septimo Martii, anno 46. E. 3. Otho, E. ix.

62. Philip Courtney, Knt. admiral of the west. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituitur die septimo Martii, anno 46. Ed. 3. Otho, E. ix.

63. Anno 50. E. 3. 1376. William Ufford, Earl of Suffolk, admiral of the north. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituted July 16, anno 50. E. 3. Otho, E. ix.

64. William Montague, Earl of Sarum. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituted July 16. Otho, E. ix.

65. Anno 51. E. 3. 1377. Michael de la Pool, admiral of the north. Faustina, c. 14.

Michael de la Pool de Englefield eques auratus constitutus die quarto Novembris, anno 51. E. 3. Otho, E. ix.

66. Frater Robertus de Hailes, prior of St. John's of Jerusalem,

rusalem, in England, admiral of the west. (Faustina, c. 14.) constituted November 24, anno 51. E. 3. Otho, E. ix.

67. Anno 1. R. 2. 1377. Thomas Beauchamp, junior, Earl of Warwick, appointed admiral of the north, December the 5th, in the first year of king Richard the Second, and continued to the fifth of November in the same year. Faustina, c. 14.

N. B. Otho, E. ix. does not name the continuance in the office until the fourth year of king Henry the Fourth.

68. Anno 1. Ri. 2. Richard Fitz-Allan, junior, Earl of Arundell, admiral of the west, constituted December the fifth, anno 1. Ri. 2. and continued to September the tenth, anno 2. Ri. 2. Faustina, c. 14.

69. Anno 2. Ri. 2. 1378. Thomas Percy eques auratus, brother of Henry Earl of Northumberland, constituted admiral of the northern coasts of England. (Faustina, c. 14.) constitutus Novembris nono die. Otho, E. ix.

70. Hugh Calville eques auratus, constituted admiral of the southern coasts of England. (Faustina, c. 14.) September the eleventh, anno 2. Ri. 2. Otho, E. ix.

Sir Thomas Percy, knight baron and his elder brother Sir Henry Percy, baron Percy, who was created Earl of Northumberland by king Richard the Second, after his coronation,
were

were both of an ancient, noble, and most respectable family in this kingdom, from the conquest. They were the sons of Sir Henry Percy Knt. Baron Percy, who, derived from William Lord Percy, came over with William the Conqueror, and married by his means Emma de Port, Lady of Scarborough and of other lands called Semer lands, within the county of Yorkshire. Harl. Manusc. No. 7371. p. 9.

And from the following extract from the same manuscript it appears that Agnes was the surviving sole issue and heir from the above marriage.

Tempore Henrici primi Joffelyn Loveyn, son and heir to Godfrey Duke of Brabant and Earl of Brussels, married Agnes, daughter and heir to William Lord Percy; for love of which lady he caused his children to be called Percys, of whom descended Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland, Thomas Percy, Earl of Norwich, Thomas Percy, Earl of Athol, and Thomas Percy, Earl of Angremont. Harl. Manusc. 7371. p. 12.

From the passing of the Statute of Prerogative, when all lands and possessions held by grant from the crown became regularly escheatable in every respective succession or descent, I am able to trace four distinct branches of this family, all publicly descendants of William Lord Percy aforementioned, seated within the county of York. The three younger collateral

G

branches

branches are, first, Peter Percy, who in the fifty-first year of king Henry the Third, 1267, died seized of Warram manor, Sutton super Derwent manor, and Mawley fee; and of Kernetby Boulton and Pooles, in Yorkshire; and that Robert was his son and immediate heir. See Claudius, c. xii. p. 3.

I have not been able to recover the escheat taken by inquest, at the death of the above Robert; but am inclined to think from the following escheat, that his heir general Catherine, married a Peter Percy of the same family.

Anno 16. E. 2. 1322. Peter Percy and Catherine his wife, held jointly Whorrome Percy manor extented, Sutton super Derwen manor, Kernetby manor and £xxv. rents, and Eboræ comitatus secta. Claudius, c. xii. p. 40.

Peter de Percy manerium de Quarrons Percy, in Bedfordshire, Constance and Joanna, daughters and coheirs, anno 1. E. 3. 1327. Claudius, c. x. p. 74.

Secondly, Of the next branch it appears that,

Anno 46, H. 3. 1262. Ingelram de Percy held the manor of Lennington, in Yorkshire. No heir mentioned. Vide Claudius, c. xii. p. 4.

Anno 11. Ed. 2d. 1317. Henry de Percy and Eleanor, his wife, held Boleby, Grimsthorpe, Fanglosse and Myttenby manors, with 4l. 6s. 8d. rents issuing in the county of York. And in the next year I find,

Anno

Anno 12th Ed. 2. Henry de Percy and Eleanor, his wife, held Crike and Lennington manors extented. Claudius, c. xii. p. 18. It should seem too as if this was a parallel case with the tenure of Peter Percy and Catherine his wife above recited, and that Eleanore was the heir general, and that Henry de Percy held all these possessions jointly jure uxoris; and I am clearly of opinion that this Henry is the representative of the elder branch of the Percy house, as will appear hereafter.

3. The third collateral branch of this noble house were the Percys of Killdale; for I find that William de Percy of Killdale, anno 13. Ed. 1. 1285, held Crathorne manor, Ormesby manor, Killdale manor, Killnigwyk manor, Dexilbrigg and Crathorne, in Yorkshire: and that Arnold was his son and heir, and William, the son of Arnold, his heir. Claudius, c. xii. p. 13.

Anno 23. Ed. 1. 1295. William de Percy, son of William de Percy, held Ormesby manor, Caldecotes manor, and one Carucate and a half in Crathorne: Alexander, his son and next heir, aged fourteen years. Claudius, c. xii. p. 18.

In tracing the lineal succession of the elder branch of this illustrious house I find that,

Anno 30. H. 3. 1245. Henricus Percye tenuit Tadcaster in co. Ebor.

Anno 39. H. 3. 1244. Richard de Percy held Tadcaster manor extented, Spofford manor extented, Linton manor, Topcliffe manor, Settell manor; and Rahened, Fromden, Westby, Malgham, Threskeld, Ashley, Gerfington Vills; Catton manor extented, Nafferton manor extented, Wanskard manor, Foston and Lekinton. Claudius, c. xii. p. 3.

Anno 8. Ed. 2. 1314. Henry de Percy died seized of thirty-two manors and vills in Yorkshire, among which almost all those in Richard Percy's tenure above recited are enumerated, and Semer manor near Scardeburgh extented, the original tenure of Emma de Port Lady of Scardeburgh, and first female ancestor of this noble house here in England is expressly mentioned; and there are besides upwards of an hundred and fifty fees held by knights service under the aforesaid Henry de Percy. He left Henry, his son and next heir, aged thirteen years. Claudius, c. xii. p. 35.

This manuscript Claudius, c. xii. seldom mentions any of the holdings of any of the parties but what are situated in the county of York; but in Claudius, c. x. there are extracts from an escheat taken after the aforesaid Henry Percy's death, and other escheats, which serve materially to confirm the idea of the reunion of the different branches of that house by marriage, and give a more comprehensive view of their possessions
in

in other counties by ascertaining what he held de dominico suo, and what jointly with his wife Aleonore de jure uxoris as above stated. Anno 8. Ed. 2. 1314. Henry de Percy the manors of Semer, Catton and Topcliffe, item castle and barony of Alnewick, Northumberland. Claudius, c. x. p. 59.

Anno 25. Ed. 3. 1352. Henry de Percy held the castle and manor of Alnewick as parcel of the barony of Alnewick, and the manor and vill of great Houghton, and the manors and vills of Tughall, Swinhoe, Chalton, Alachan, with the castle and manor of Warkworth, in Northumberland; Henry Percy, son and heir, aged thirty years. Claudius, c. x. p. 124.*

Anno 42. E. 3. 1374. P. le Percy held the castle and manor of Alnewick in dominico suo ut de fœdo talliato cum villis et aliis subscriptis, Burgam de Alnewicke et Alnemouth, as parcel of the barony of Alnewicke. Item multa alia maneria in comitatibus Eboræ, Lincolnæ, Leicestræ, et London, Henricus Percy filius et hæres. Claudius, c. x. p. 157.

Anno 42. E. 3. Henricus le Percy le Pier, de hæreditate

* In proof of the superior weight and pre-eminence of the Percy family in the county of York, at this time, it appears from the rolls of parliament that toward the array of men at arms Hobelers and archers for Scotland from the county of York, anno 13. E. 3. 1340. Monsieur le Percy brought 120 men at arms, and 200 archers. The next highest numbers are, Le Counte D'Areghes 40 men at arms, 100 archers. Monsieur de Neville 80 men at arms, 200 archers. Monsieur le Lucy 60 men at arms, 200 archers. Monsieur de Mowbray 60 men at arms, 200 archers. Vide Harl. Manusc. no. 14. p. 59.

Joannæ quæ fuit uxor ejus, a certain parcel of the manor of Bokenham in Norfolk, as parcel of the barony of Tatteshull. Claudius, c. x. p. 158.

Anno 46. E. 3. Margaret, late wife of Henry de Percy, Knt. held in dower of the inheritance of William de Roos, of Hamlake, her former husband, Linton super Owse, in co. Ebor. Item Wragby, in co. Lincoln; item Orston & Worsop, in co. Nottinghamiæ: Thomas, brother of William Roos, her late husband, heir. Claudius, c. x. p. 79.

This Sir Thomas Percy, admiral of the north, married Elizabeth, one of the daughters of David Strabolgie, the last Earl of Athol of that name; and by her had Henry Percy, who afterwards became Earl of Athol, in king Henry the Fourth's reign, and left issue Lucia, his sole daughter and heir, married to Sir Thomas Brough, Knt.; Henry Percy (created temp. H. 4.) Earl of Athol, the son of Sir Thomas Percy, Knt. and of Elizabeth, his wife, one of the daughters and coheirs of David Strabology, Earl of Athol, had issue Lucie, his daughter and heir, married to Sir Thomas Brough, Knt. of whom is descended the Lord Brough now living. Harl. Manusc. 7371. p. 30.

71. Adm. north, anno 3. Ri. 2di. Willielmus de Elmham eques auratus constituitur admirallus versus partes boreales,
octavo

octavo die Martis, anno tertio Ricardi secundi, et permanfit in eodem officio ufque ad viceffimum fextum diem Octobris ejufdem anni.

72. Adm. weft, anno 3. Ri. 2di. Philippus Courtney eques auratus regis confanguineus ex illuftri cortneiorum comitum Devoniz familia originem ducens, conftituitur admirallus verfus partes occidentales eodem die Martii octavo, anno tertio Ricardi secundi, 1379; et permanfit in eodem officio ufque ad diem viceffimum fecundum Maii, anno 5. Ri. 2. Fauftina, c. ix.

Of Sir William Elmham I have not been able to difcover any trace; I fhall only premife an obfervation that there is an hiatus in the appointment to the northern diftrict of the admiralty for the two following years, from the 26th of October, 3d Ri. 2d, when Sir William Elmham went out; there is no fubfequent appointment entered in either of the manufcripts I extract from, until Sir Walter Fitzwalters, appointed October 26, anno 6. Ri. 2.

Sir Philip Courtney was a descendant of Hugh Courtney, the firft Earl of Devon of that name, in right of Margaret, the wife of Thomas Courtney, his grandfather, daughter of William de Ripariis, Earl of Devon and Lord of the Ifle of Wight. This Sir Philip Courtney died without iffue before the fixth of Henry the Fourth, poffeffed of the mannor of Harrington,

Harrington, in Devonshire, in fee tail, with remainder to his brother, Peter Courtney and his heirs male, as appears from the following escheat.

Anno 6. H. 4. Petrus Courtney miles fibi et hæredibus suis masculis manerium de Est Coker, et conjunctim cum Margareta uxore ejus manerium de Raden, quodque Edwardus Courtney, comes Devon est consanguineus et hæres, videlicet filius Edwardi fratris prædicti Petri.

Idem Petrus tenuit manerium de Harrington (in co. Devon) fibi et suis masculis (hæredibus) pro defectu Philipii Courtney militis fratris ejusdem Petri.

Item tenuit de jure Magaretæ, uxoris suæ, manerium de Iker dentrivische in comitatu Wilt. Claudius, c. x. p. 265.

See also the pedigree of Geraldus Camerarius. Harl. Manusc. 294. p. 2.

73. Adm. north, anno 6. Ri. 2. 1382. Walterus Fitzwalter eques auratus dominus de Wodham, constituitur admirallus versus partes boreales Angliæ, die viceffimo sexto Octobris, anno sexto Ricardi secundi; et permanfit in eodem officio usque ad tertiodecimum Novembris, anno 7. Ri. adi.

74. Adm. west. Johannes de Rupibus eques auratus admirallus versus partes occidentales Angliæ, viceffimo secundo die Maii, anno 5. Ri. 2di. et permanfit in eodem officio usque

ad diem 13. Novembris, anno 7. R. 2. (Nov. 19. in Otho, E. ix.) Faustina, c. ix.

I can find no trace of John de Rupibus in the escheat books. Walter Fitzwalter was the head of a noble house of great possessions and respectability, from early times to the tenth year of king Henry the Sixth, when Walter Fitzwalter died and left Elizabeth, the wife of John Radcliffe, his daughter and heir. This family possessed (exclusively of the barony of Fitzwalter) a mediety of the barony of Laummale, derived from the marriage of Robert Fitzwalter (a younger branch) Lord of the manor of Shopiland, in Essex, in the reign of Henry the Third, with Devorguilla, who, with her sister Haweise, were daughters and coheirs of John de Burgo, who was Lord of the manor of Wakerly, in Northamptonshire: and in right of his wife Haweise died moreover possessed, anno 3. Ed. 1. of the manor and advowson of Warke; and also of the whole barony of Laummale, in Northamptonshire; and of the manor of Hallingbury and advowson in Northamptonshire; and also of the manor and advowson of Lexden, in Essex, as of the barony of Laummale. Vide Claudius, c. x. p. 59. and Harl. Manusc. 821. p. 32.

This Robert Fitzwalter, or at least his representative, in these tenures of the same name, died anno 19. E. 2. 1325,

H

seized

seized of the manors of Woodham Walters, Burnham, Reyn-
don, Dunmowe parva, Henham, Wynbish, Teye and Lex-
don, in Essex: and that all these manors, with others in Nor-
folk and Suffolk, are held of the king in capite for an entire
barony, by the service of three knights fees. Item the manor
of Hemenhall, in Norfolk. Claudius, c. xii. p. 48.

Anno 2. Ed. 3d. 1529. Robert Fitzwalter died seized of
Woodham Walters, &c. in Essex, and the manor of Shymp-
ling, in the county of Suffolk; and that John is his son and
immediate heir. Claudius, c. x. p. 76.

Anno 37. Ed. 3d. 1363. Joanna, late wife of Robert Fitz-
walter died seized of Henham and Shenfield manors, Essex,
and of Shympling manor, in Suffolk, as of the barony of
Fitzwalter. Item Hemenhall manor in Norfolk. Claudius,
c. x. p. 148.

Anno 35. E. 3. 1361. John Fitzwalter, dominus de
Woodham died seized (nearly as before) and of the manor of
Dyffe, in Norfolk. Claudius, c. x. p. 142.

This John was probably the father or elder brother, or at
least the immediate predecessor in the barony of Fitzwalter,
of this admiral Walter Fitzwalter, who married Joanna ***
and died anno 10. of king Richard the Second.

Anno 10. R. 2. Walter Fitzwalter held the manor of Burn-
ham

ham of the king in chief, as parcel of the barony of Fitzwalter, half the lordship of Maldon; the manor of Woodham Walters, and the manor of Crixheath, in Essex, and that Walter is his son and heir.

Item the manors of Lexden and great Tay, in Essex.

Item the manors of Ashe, Dunmowe parva, Reydon, and the manor of Henham, in Essex.

Item Schympling manor, in the county of Suffolk.

Item the manors of Hemenhall, Dyffe, and Fincham, in the county of Norfolk.

Item the third part of the manor of Egremonde, in the county of Cumberland, and that Walter is his son and next heir.

I have only farther to observe of this noble house; that the male line failing, by the death of Walter Lord Fitzwalter, anno 10. H. 6. and after the death of Elizabeth, his wife, anno 4th Ed. 4. the manors of Woodham Walters, Burnham, Henham, and Dunmowe, in Essex, vested in Elizabeth, their daughter and heir, the wife of Sir John Radcliffe, Knt. See the escheats. Claudius, c. x. p. 331. and ad annum 4. Ed. 4.

175. Anno 7. Ricardi secundi, 1383. Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland was appointed admiral of the north; and

76. Edward Courtney, Earl of Devon, admiral of the west, on the nineteenth day of November, anno 7. Ri. 2di. 1383. Otho, c. ix.

This Henry de Percy, eldest son and heir of Henry le Percy le Pier mentioned before, was after the death of Henry de Mowbray, the last Earl of Northumberland, of that house, created Earl of Northumberland by king Richard the Second, at the day of his coronation in Westminster-hall, as appears from the following extract.

At the coronation before dinner in Westminster-hall, the king Richard the Second created his uncle, Thomas of Woodstock, Earl of Buckingham; Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland; John de Mowbray of Axholme, Earl of Nottingham; and Guychard d'Angle, Earl of Huntingdon: and knighted John son of Thomas Roos of Hamlake, Robert de Grey de Rotherfield; Richard son of Gilbert Talbot, Gerard son of Warren de Lisle, Michael son of Michael de la Pole, Richard de Ponyns, Robert de Harrington, and Thomas de la Mare, to be knights to the aforesaid Earls for the ensuing jousts during the time of dinner. The day following the king, with all the nobles, court, &c. went in procession through the city to St. Paul's church, where a sermon was preached by the Bishop of Rochester, the treasurer; to
 implore

implore the Divine favour of the King of Kings, and prosperity to the king and kingdom. Vide Cotton Manusc. Nero Dvi.

This Henry Percy, the first Earl of Northumberland, died anno 9th Henry 4, and it was remarkable that as well this brave Earl as his two immediate successors in that earldom, closed their career of glory in the field of battle.

Henricus Percy occisus apud Bramham Moor contra regem, 19 die Februarii, anno nono regis Henrici quarti, 1408.

Henry Percy, his grandson, from his son Henry, restored in parliament, anno 2. H. 5, killed in the battle at Saint Alban's, 22 May, anno 33. H. 6. 1454, and

Henry Percy, his son, killed in the battle of Shireburn, on the 29th of March, anno 1. E. 4. 1460. Vide Harl. Manusc. 807. p. 71.

Edward Courtney, fifth Earl of Devon of that name, was Edward son of Hugh Courtney, Earl of Devon, who died anno 51. Ed. 3d, and he died anno the seventh of Henry the Fifth, and left Hugh Courtney, Knt. his son and immediate heir. Claudius, c. x. p. 292.

77. Anno 8. R. 2. 1384. Thomas Percy, eques auratus, brother of Henry Earl of Northumberland, constituitur admirallus versus partes boreales Angliæ, viceffimo nono die Januarii, anno octavo Ricardi secundi.

78. Johannes Radyngton, prior sancti Johannis apud Jerusalem.

salem in Anglia, admirallus versus partes occidentales eodem die. Otho, c. ix.

79. Anno 9. R. 2. 1385. Sir Phillip Darcy, Knt. Lord Darcy, admiral of the north, appointed the 22d of February, and

80. Sir Thomas Trivet, Knt. admiral of the west, the same day. Faustina, c. ix. *

81. Anno 10. R. 2. 1386. Richard Fitzalan, junior, Earl of Arundel and Surrey, was constituted admiral of England, December the tenth, in the tenth year of king Richard the Second, and continued in the same office to the eighteenth day of May, anno 12. R. 2. Faustina; c. ix.

This Richard Fitzalan, junior, was the son of Richard Fitzalan, who was restored in blood, honours and possessions in king Edward the Third's reign, and in the same reign he was elected knight of the most noble order of the Garter into the stall the tenth of the prince's side; after the death of Sir Nigell Lorang, a founder, and was put to death at London in the twentieth year of king Richard the Second. Harl. Manusc. 234. circiter page 110.

He was one of the five Lords Appellants who, with his colleagues, Thomas Duke of Gloucester, Henry Earl of Derby, Thomas Earl of Warwick, and Thomas Earl Marshal; together with Thomas Arundel then Bishop of

* The above Sir Philip Darcy, anno 20. R. 2d. held Yarm manor, Afelby manor and Aldwicke manor, and ten knights fees and one quarter in Yorkshire. Claudius, c. xii. ad ann.

Ely, the chancellor afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury; devised and executed, anno 11th of king Richard the Second, the high commission of inquest, under the sanction of an express statute of parliament; and of an oath of fealty taken by all the Lords, the representative of the Commons in parliament, and the principal persons throughout the kingdom, to defend and support them in the execution of the high powers committed to them; and with the subsequent statute of pardon and indemnity to the Duke of Gloucester and the Earls of Arundel and Warwick, passed in parliament anno 11. R. 2, and a second pardon from the king to the Earl of Arundel, anno 16. R. 2. Vide Harl. Manusc. 21. ad annos.

And yet, notwithstanding all these circumstances, anno 21. R. 2, after a previous pardon and indemnity passed by parliament to the Earl of Derby, and the Earl Marshal; the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Earls of Arundel and Warwick were all severally arraigned, attainted and sentenced to death or banishment and forfeiture of all their lands in fee or feetail of which they had been seized respectively, previous to the 19th of November, anno 10. R. 2, and of all their goods and chattels, &c.. The Archbishop of Canterbury (late Bishop of Ely) for that, he as chancellor procured, and as Chief executed the same commission, viz. to himself and the five Lords Appellants to reform the abuses in the state,
made

made traiterously in the tenth year of king Richard the Second. (Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 199.) and the Earls of Arundel and Warwick, for their proceedings under the said commission.

The Duke of Gloucester had been previously basely murdered in prison, at Calais, without arraignment, trial, defence or answer, according to law; but upon the alleged ground of a confession signed by himself in prison at Calais, before William Rickill, one of the king's justices, read in parliament, and published to the world in a mutilated state however, as appears by Rykill's own confession; he was, after his death, adjudged in parliament as a traitor, and his late lands, goods and chattels forfeited.

The Archbishop of Canterbury was likewise adjudged a traitor, his lands, goods and chattels forfeited, and himself sentenced to banishment. The two remaining Earls were adjudged to die as traitors, and to forfeit as before: the unhappy Earl of Arundel's sentence was mitigated, for that he was come of noble blood and house. (Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 208.) The king pardoned him the execution of hanging, drawing and quartering, and granted that he should be beheaded; and therefore commandment was given to Thomas Morley, Lieutenant of the Marshal, to do execution next to the Tower of London; and so the said Earl was beheaded the same day. The Earl of Warwick's sentence was, at the intercession of
the

the Lords Appellants and the Commons, was changed for banishment in the Isle of Man, during his life.

All these proceedings were carried on by the High Court of Parliament under a similar special high commission, (equally irregular and illegal with the preceding one, in the eleventh year of king Richard,) constituting Edward Earl of Rutland, Thomas Earl of Kent, John Earl of Huntington, Thomas Earl of Nottingham, John Earl of Somerset, John Earl of Salop, Thomas Lord le Despenser, and William le Scroop, Lords Appellants; with nearly similar engagements upon oath taken by the Lords, Commons and clergy in parliament, who swore by the shrine of St. Edward, that they would observe all ordinances of this parliament. Enacting moreover by common assent, that the said oath should be enrolled in the chancery; so as the successor of every Bishop, and the heir of every Lord, should swear the same before their livery had of their temporalities. Vide Rot. Parl. 21: R. 2. m. 21.

They farther enacted by express statute that none should go about to repeal any thing done against the parliament of the eleventh of Richard the Second; the bishops moreover pronouncing an excommunication, and providing censures, against all such as should impugn the same. Vide Rot. 21. R. 2. m. 20. Harl. Manusc. 21. p. 200.

And yet notwithstanding all these powers, engagements and securities before two years elapsed ; after the revolution and accession of king Henry the Fourth, in the first year of his reign, all these proceedings of the parliament of the late king Richard the Second were repealed, and at the petition of the Commons six of the eight Lords Appellants were arraigned and tried for their proceedings under the high commission, by the high court of parliament ; where, in their presence Sir William Thirning, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, in a speech still in preservation in placita coronæ, anno primo regis Henrici quarti (Vide Harl. Manusc. no. 21. p. 225, &c.) after enlarging on the nature of their offence, “ that the
 “ king and his temporal Lords thought that this appeal and
 “ the matter contained there was so great and so high, and so
 “ much harm and mischief fell thereof ; that is to say, some
 “ persons did come in prison, forfeitures of heritages and dis-
 “ herisons, subversion of the law of the land, high estate and
 “ great taking because of their forfeitures ; in great oppression
 “ and charge of the common people of the realm ; and all
 “ begun and proceeded out of the course of the common law,
 “ so that by the course of the common law of the crown it
 “ might not well be redressed nor punished but by the king
 “ and his lords peers of this realm, in this high court of par-
 “ liament ; wherefore all these temporal lords thought, there
 “ should

“ should be such judgment given in this cause upon these
 “ Lords Appellants, as might be safety and surety principally
 “ to the king’s high estate, and salvation and surety of the
 “ other estates of the realm, with mercy and grace of the king,
 “ as it longeth to him and to his royal estate in his own discre-
 “ tion; and over this on the morn, that is to wit, on the Friday
 “ (in the feast of St. Faith) the king communed with the Spiri-
 “ tual Lords of this same matter in as much as might be
 “ communed with them for honesty of their estates of holy
 “ kirke. The which thought that it were well done (with-
 “ out death or any other thing that they might not honestly
 “ assent to nor speak of); for to put such punishment and
 “ such chastizing in this case that it might be good surety as
 “ it is aforesaid, and good example in time coming to them
 “ and to others, that they fall no more in mischief. Upon
 “ which the king and all these lords aforesaid, having confide-
 “ ration,” &c. and (after reciting divers considerations, &c.
 which, for brevity sake, I here omit, Sir William Fleming, the
 Chief Justice, proceeds as follows verbatim). “ Upon which
 “ the lords in this parliament, by the assent of the king,
 “ doom and adjudge and decree, that the Dukes of Albemarle,
 “ Surry and Exeter, that be here present and appellants,
 “ lose and forego from them and their heirs these names that

“ they have now as Dukes,” (to which they had been created on
 the Saturday in the Michalmas week, anno 21. R. 2. Vide Harl.
 Manusc. 21. p. 200.) “ and the worship and the dignity there-
 “ of; and the Marquis of Dorset, (created as before,) here
 “ present, from him and his heirs the name of Marquis; and
 “ the Earl of Gloucester here present, (created as before) the
 “ name of Earl and the worship thereof: and all the castles,
 “ manors, lordships and other possessions, franchises and liber-
 “ ties, goods and chattels; of which goods and chattels the
 “ king was not answered nor served of that they had of them
 “ they appealed and forfeited at that time, the day of the arrest
 “ of the Duke of Gloucester and other lords, (or at any time
 “ Sithen) simply without any grace or mercy; and all other
 “ castles, manors, lordships and possessions, franchises and
 “ liberties that they had of the king’s gift at that same day,
 “ or sithence in the king’s grace and in his mercy; and that
 “ all the patents or charters that they or any of them hath of
 “ these names, castles, manors, lordships and possessions,
 “ franchises and liberties, be yielded up into chancery, there
 “ to be cancelled; and that they dwell only in the state that
 “ they had in name and possession before the same day of the
 “ arrest; and that they see none of them give no liveries of
 “ seigneurs, and make no retinue of men, but of officers
 “ necessary

“ necessary ; out of their household for to govern their lands and
 “ possessions ; and of counsel, that conveniently belongs to
 “ their estate. And over this the temporal lords, by the as-
 “ sent of the king, adjudgeth and awardeth, that if these
 “ Lords Appellants, or any of them, ever be adherents to Ri-
 “ chard that was king and is deposed in counsel, help or com-
 “ fort against that deposition or judgment, or judgments, or
 “ dinances or affirmances in this parliament, touching the per-
 “ son of the same Richard ; that they be in pain of treason,
 “ and for such holden and reputed.

“ And for as much as there hath been and is great clamour
 “ and noise among the people, that some of their men have
 “ done great extortions, wrongs and oppressions to the people ;
 “ infomuch that it hath been said, that some men that were
 “ with them, under colour of their lordships and high estates
 “ that their lordships were in, have taken much more by ex-
 “ tortion and oppression of the king’s people, and by main-
 “ tenance of quarrels, than all the remanents of all their live-
 “ lihoods amounted to ; wherefore all the lords, by assent of
 “ the king, adjudge and award, that proclamation be made
 “ throughout all the realm, that if any man will complain to
 “ them of any of the lords, or of any of their men that be
 “ with them, or have been in these times, of any extortions,
 “ wrongs.

“ wrongs or oppressions done to them by them, to come and
 “ remedy shall be done to them.” Harl. Manusc. no. 21.
 p. 226.

The Commons moreover petitioned the king and lords for the reversal of the erroneous appeal and judgment of the late Richard, and restitution of Thomas son and heir of the said Richard Earl of Arundel adjudged and executed, anno 21. R. 2. and that the records of the inheritance and possessions of the said Richard, late Earl of Arundel and Surrey, crazed and embezzled in consequence of the erroneous, false appeal, sentence and execution ; may be re-exemplified in the rolls, in favour of Thomas, the present Earl, to secure and perpetuate the said Thomas his title and that of his heirs ; with similar petitions in favour of the Archbishop of Canterbury (late Bishop of Ely,) and Thomas Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, for restitution and reversal of judgment, &c. and another general petition likewise, for reversal of judgment and full restitution, as well to many of the great lords of the realm as to very many others of all estates and degrees ; who by false appeals and accusations preferred against them, in the last parliament held at Westminster and by adjournment at Shrewsbury ; have been adjudged as traitors, and to forfeit their lordships, manors, lands, tenements, reversions, fees, advowsons, possessions and hereditaments of every kind,

as

as well in fee tail as in fee simple ; and likewise of other lands, and tenements with which others were enfeoffed for their use and benefit.

To the first petition in favour of the archbishop. Rot. Pat. 1. H. 4. m. 109. the king answered, le Roy le voet.

To the second, in favour of Thomas Earl of Arundel, the answer, “ the king hath shewed favour to Thomas now Earl, “ and to others, as appears from the record in this parliament.”

Membrane 110.

To the third, in favour of Thomas Earl of Warwick, (Membrane 111.) the answer, “ the king hath already shewed “ favour to the Earl as before.”

To the fourth general petition of the Commons for a general reversal and restitution, the answer is, “ The king hath been “ gracious in many points of this petition, as appears from the “ record in this roll of parliament ; for the remaining points he “ will be advised.” See Harl. Manusc. no. 20. p. 56. and no. 21. p. 220.

The candid and dispassionate reader cannot but feel some repugnance and disgust, in observing that obsequious readiness and extreme facility with which the two last-mentioned parliaments, in those turbulent days, reversed the proceedings of their predecessors ; instituted under every solemn precaution
of

of security and indemnity, which human policy could devise; sanctioned by the sacred obligation of oaths, as well within as without its walls, and the inhibitory fulmina of ecclesiastical sentences; and still more at the severe treatment shewn to the Lords Appellants in both instances: but they were grounded if not justified in both respects, by the ancient common law of this kingdom, as declared and confirmed by the ordinance or statute made by twenty Lords Spiritual and Temporal appointed for that purpose, and passed in parliament the fifth day of October, anno quinto Edwardi secundi 1311, and proclaimed by the Bishop of Salisbury in Saint Paul's cathedral the same day.

It consists of forty-six articles, or chapters of which I will beg leave to lay the thirty-second and thirty-fourth chapters before the reader.

Cap. 32. Sur ceo que mults de gents sont deslais en le court le roy de leur demand, par taunt que la partie allegge, que les demandants ne devroient estre responduz faunz le roi; et auxint multz dez gentz grevez par ministres le roy encountre droiture, des queux grevances homme ne purra recoverir faunz commun parlement: nous ordinons que le roy tienne parlement une fois per an, ou deux fois si mestier soit; et ceo en lieu convenable; et que en mesmes les parlements soient
les

les plees qui font en la dite forme deslayes, et les plees la où les justices font en divers opinions, recorder et tetminez : et en mesme la maniere soient les billes terminez qui livres soient en parlement si avant come lei et reson le demande.

Cap. 34. Einsiement nous ordinons, que tous les estatuts qui font faits en amendement de la lei, et au profit du peuple, par les ancestres notre seigneur le roi, soient gardez et maintenez sy en avant, come estre devroient par la lei et reson : issint que eux ne soient contraires a la grant chartre, ne a la chartre de la foreste, ne en contre les ordinances par nous faits. Et si nul estatut soit fait encountre la forme deffusdite, soit tenu pur nul, et tout outrement defait. Claudius, D. 2. p. 295.

The reader, I trust, will pardon my having digressed at some length, in giving a summary sketch of the outline of the above irregular proceedings in those turbulent times, a liberty I shall indulge myself in very sparingly, if at all, now we are got to the fifteenth century ; as the general scope and plan of the work will not admit of it. My motive was to contrast them in the public judgment and opinion, with that happy tranquillity, perfect security and sure protection in his personal safety, rights and property, which every subject of these realms now rejoices, under our most excellent laws and constitution,

K

confirmed,

confirmed, improved and perfected as they are at present ; and the more so, as these strange events and vicissitudes of those unsettled times have, must, and I trust, ever will operate, as an impressive memento to all persons, however high in rank, situation, power and influence ; not to demean and prostitute themselves in ever becoming the instruments under any commission or powers whatsoever, to trample down the barrier of the laws and constitution, in order to gratify the ambition, malice, revenge or interested views of any predominant party, faction, interest or power whatever.

I have only to add, with respect to this unfortunate admiral, Richard Earl of Arundel, that besides his son Thomas, who was restored in blood, honours and possessions by king Henry the Fourth, and three daughters that survived their brother Thomas, he probably had another daughter Philippa, married to Richard Sergeaux, who was left a widow, and died anno 1. H. 4. leaving four daughters coheirs ; and that his son Thomas the next Earl of Arundel died anno 3. H. 5. leaving his three sisters coheirs, as appears from the following escheats.

Anno 1. A. 4. 1399. Philippa Sergeaux, late wife of Richard Sergeaux, knight, the manor of Tremodrats in Cornwall, and that Elizabeth, wife of William Marney, knight,
aged

aged twenty-one years ; Phillippa, aged eighteen years, married to * * * * of St. Alban's ; Alice and Joanna, aged seven years, are the daughters and heirs of the aforesaid Philippa and Richard her late husband. Claudius, c. x. p. 249.

Anno 1. H. 4. Richard, the last Earl of Arundel, seized of the manor of Chepping Norton in Oxfordshire, gave it to Richard Sergeaux and Philippa, his wife, and Richard, and afterwards Philippa, his wife died seized of the same ; after whose death the aforesaid manor descended to Elizabeth, Philippa, Alicia, and Joanna, daughters and coheirs of the aforesaid Richard and Philippa Sergeaux ; and afterwards the aforesaid Joanna and Elizabeth died, to whom remain Philippa and Alice, sisters and heirs. See Claudius, c. x. p. 253.

Anno 4th of king Henry the Fifth, 1315. Thomas Earl of Arundel, jointly with Beatrice his wife, held the manor of Rynaler in Wiltshire, and that Elizabeth Dutcheſs of Norfolk now wife of Gerard Ufflete knight, and Joanna Beauchamp baroneſs of Abergavenny, and Margaret of Arundel wife of Roland Lenthall knight, are sisters and heirs of the aforesaid Thomas Earl of Arundel. Claudius, c. x. p. 285.

82. Anno 12. of Richard the Second, anno D. 1388, John de Beaumont, baron of Folkingham, was constituted admiral of the north, on the 20th day of May ; and

83. John Holand Earl of Huntingdon, younger brother of Thomas Earl of Kent, was constituted admiral of the west on the eighteenth day of May, anno 12. R. 2. Fauftina, c. 9.

Sir John Beaumont, Lord Beaumont de Folkingham, was anno 19. R. 2. elected knight of the most noble order of the Garter into stall the thirteenth on the sovereign's side, after the death of Sir John Devereux, (Harl. Manusc. 234.) and died the year following, as appears from the following escheat.

Anno 20. R. 2. Johannes de Bello Monte Chr. tenuit die quo obiit the manor of Whelewicke and two parts of the manor of Sykepeshede, in Leicestershire.

Item the manors of Carlington, Dicheburne and Pill in Northumberland.

Item the manor of Barton, with the passage over the Humber, the manor and advowson of Thoreswey, and of Lindewode, and the manors of Wellburne, and castle Folkingham and Edenham Baston and their advowsons in Lincolnshire, and that Henry de Beaumont is his son and next heir.

Item the manor of Kerstey in Suffex.

Item the aforesaid John de Bello Monte held in Lincolnshire the manor of Brethan, with the Lordship called the Honour of Brethan; the manors of Therley and Brotelby.

Item the castle of Chester, with its appurtenances, to wit,
castle

castle Grisleby, North Kelsey, South Kelsey, Hauton, Fulnetby, the manor of Bestyby, in the parishes of Beyfery, Hauwardly, Walde, Norton Gannerby. See escheat, Harl. MSS. 807. p. 537.

With regard to the next admiral, Sir John Holland, it is difficult to ascertain upon what ground he is styled here Earl of Huntindon, as there is no creation to that title in the Harleian Manuscript account of the old peerage, No. 5371, until the fourteenth year of Richard the Second, two years after this appointment; from the creation of William Fines Lord Clinton, anno 9. E. 3. who left one sole daughter and heir, married to Sir William Fitzwilliam, who in her right became Earl of Huntindon, and died likewise without issue male by that marriage. John Holland, brother of Thomas Holland the Earl of Kent, was created Duke of Exeter, anno 21. R. 2. by the king sitting on his throne in parliament, as appears from the rolls of parliament of that year. John Holland Duke of Exeter left Henry his son and heir Duke of Exeter and Earl of Huntindon, who died without issue male; and the title of the Dukedom of Exeter became extinct until Thomas Beaufort, son of John de Ghent, Duke of Lancaster, by Catherine Swinford, was created Duke of Exeter, anno 1. H. 5. and no other creation appears to the earldom of Huntindon until the reign of Henry the Eighth,
when

when George Lord Hastings Botreaux and Molins was created Earl of Huntingdon. But the strange mystery is, that in the escheat books I find several obits of Earl of Huntindon of the name of Holland.

Anno 2 H. 5. John Holland Earl of Huntindon held Dertington and Framington manors in Devonshire, in tail to his heirs male, by Elizabeth his wife, and that Richard is his son and heir. Claudius, c. x. p. 282.

Anno 4. Henry 5. Richard Earl of Huntindon, the manor of Blackdon, in Somersetsshire, John de Holland his brother and heir, p. 288.

Anno 4. H. 5. John de Holand Earl of Huntindon, held Tromaton castle and the manor in Cornwall, and that Joanna de Holand is his daughter and heir, p. 287.

Anno 4. H. 6. Elizabeth, wife of John late Earl of Huntindon, the borough of Barnstaple, &c. in Devon, and that John now Earl is heir.

Without presuming to attempt clearing up the difficulty of ascertaining of what branch the three last-named Earls of Huntindon are, I shall conclude this article with the following extracts from Harl. Manusc. 234. tempore R. 2.

John Holland Earl of Huntindon, afterwards created Duke of Exeter was, in the thirteenth year of king R. 2. elected knight

knight of the most noble Order of the Garter; and placed in the fourth stall of the king's side, after the death of William Montague Earl of Salisbury, a founder; and he was beheaded at Plashly in Essex, anno the first of Henry the Fourth.

John Holland, brother to the Earl of Kent, was created Earl of Huntindon, in the fourteenth year of king Richard the Second, and in the twentieth year, Duke of Exeter; of whom there did descend Henry Duke of Exeter, that died without issue, and Anne, his sister, that was married to Sir Thomas Neville, father of Ralph Neville, third Earl of Westmorland; and Constance, mother of Lord Grey of Ruthen and of Thomas Grey Lord Richmond. Harl. Manusc. 7371. tempore Ri. 2di.

84. Anno 12. of Richard the Second, 1388. Johannes de Rupibus eques auratus was constituted admiral of England the thirty first day of May, of whom I have not yet been able to recover any trace in the escheat books, &c. the same that was appointed to the western district in the sixth year of this reign.

85. John de Beaumont (Baro de Folkingham, Otho, E. ix.) was appointed admiral of the north; and

86. John Holland Earl of Huntindon, younger brother of the Earl of Kent, was appointed admiral of the west; both
on

on the twenty-second day of June, anno thirteenth of Richard the Second, 1389, and both the same as before, anno twelfth of Richard the Second. And here it is evident, that in this year, and it is the first instance that has occurred to my observation, there were existing at the same time an admiral of England and an admiral of the northern and western district of the admiralty likewise. *Faustina, c. ix.*

87. Anno 15. R. 2. 1391. Edward Earl of Rutland and Cambridge, eldest son of Edward de Langley, Duke of York, afterwards Duke of Albemarle, was constituted admiral as well of the northern as of the western coasts of England (November the 29th, Otho, E. ix.) and continued in that high office until the ninth of May, anno 21. Ri. 2di. *Faustina, c. ix.*

Edward Earl of Rutland, created Duke of Albemarle, and after Duke of York (was elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter) into stall the fourth of the prince's side, anno twelfth of king Richard the Second, after the death of Sir Richard Burley ; and was slain at Agincourt field, anno the third of king Henry the Fifth. *Harl. Manusc. 235.*

It appears from the father's escheat, anno fourth of H. 4. that Edmund Duke of York gave up to his son, Edward Earl of Rutland long before his death, his lordship of Tindale in Northumberland, cum libertatibus regalibus, &c. The Earl,

at

at his father's death, was thirty years of age, anno the fourth of Henry the Fourth. Claudius, c. x. p. 260.

Edward Plantagenet, son and heir of Edmund of Langley, Duke of York, was created Earl of Rutland, in the fourteenth year of king Richard the Second ; and in the twentieth year of the same reign he was created Duke of Aumarle by the king in parliament, (and became one of the eight Lords Appellants) but was deprived of the title of Duke, anno the first of Henry the Fourth ; and after the death of his father, anno 2. H. 4. he was Duke of York, and he was slain in the battle of Agincourt, and had no issue. Harl. Manusc. 7371.

88. Anno 21. R. 2. 1397. John Beaufort Marquis of Dorset (Earl of Somerset and seneschal of England, Otho, E. ix.) son of John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster by Catherine Swinford, and brother of king Henry the Fourth ; was appointed admiral *versus partes tam boreales quam occidentales Angliæ*, the ninth day of May, and continued in that office until the sixteenth day of January in the following year. *Fau-ffina*, c. ix.

John Beaufort, son to John Plantagenet, or John de Ghent, Duke of Lancaster, by his third wife Catherine Swinford, was created Earl of Somerset by king Richard the Second, in the fourteenth year of his reign ; and in his twentieth year (in the

rolls of parliament it was in the twenty-first year that all those creations were made by the king sitting upon his throne in full parliament); he was created the Marquis of Dorset. He married Margaret, one of the daughters and heirs of Thomas Holland Earl of Kent, by whom he had issue John Duke of Somerset and Marquis of Dorset; and Edmund Earl of Montague, and after Duke of Somerset. This John Marquis of Dorset (one of the eight Lords Appellants) was by parliament, in the first year of Henry the Fourth, deposed from the dignity of Marquis Dorset, and remained only Earl of Somerset. Harl. Manusc. No. 7371.

John Beaufort Earl of Somerset, son of John Plantagenet, or John of Ghent, captain of Calais, was elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, anno 1. H. 4. and placed in the stall the thirteenth of the sovereign's side; after the death of Sir John Beaumont Lord of Folkingham, which happened anno 20. Ri. 2di; and he died anno 11. H. 4. See Harl. Manusc. 235.

Johannes nuper comes Somerset de jure Margaretæ uxoris suæ manerium de Bikley, quodque Henricus Beaufort est filius et hæres. Harl. Manusc. 640. p. 274.

This son died anno 4. H. 6. as appears from the following escheat.

Comes

Comes Somersæt, anno 4. H. 6. * * * diversæ terræ in comitatu Somersæt, devenerunt in manus regis ratione minoris ætatis Henrici filii et hæredis ejusdem nuper comitis; quodque Johannes Beauford est frater et hæres. Claudius, c. x. p. 315.

There is in the rolls of parliament, anno 2. H. 4, a petition of the House of Commons and seconded by the Peers Spiritual and Temporal; which, with the king's answer to it, bears so very honourable a testimony in favour of the two last-mentioned brave and noble high admirals, the Earls of Somersæt and Rutland; that I am persuaded my readers will not be displeased if I close my account of them with the insertion of it.

Rot. Parl. anno 2. H. 4. Membrane 33. The same day (on Wednesday the ninth of March), the Commons aforesaid shew, how in the last parliament certain judgments and ordinances were made and declared against the Earls of Somersæt, Kent, Rutland, and others, as may appear from the rolls of judgments of the said parliament there made; and inasmuch as since that time God of his Grace had separated the good and the bad of the Lords and others above-named, as is now well known from their respective conduct; and that the aforesaid Earls of Rutland and Somersæt had approved themselves good and loyal subjects of our most gracious sovereign, in their whole demeanor since. Wherefore the aforesaid Commons petition their

gracious sovereign the king, that in consideration of their great loyalty and good behaviour, and how near they are to him in blood ; he would graciously be pleased to declare them such loyal subjects, and restored to their full honour and estate hereafter, as they were heretofore in liberties and franchises ; and in every respect as entirely as any other lords of the realm, notwithstanding any judgment or ordinance that has been made to the contrary. And upon this all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, most humbly kneeling upon their knees, united in the same petition, in favour of the aforesaid Earls of Rutland and Somerset, in like manner as the Commons had done. Upon which his Majesty, with his own mouth in full parliament, recorded the aforesaid Earls of Rutland and Somerset, for their loyalty, and their good and dutiful behaviour towards him ; and thanked the aforesaid Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons ; for their just and honest petition and request in this behalf ; and granted it entirely in its full purport. Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 20. p. 77. and No. 21. p. 229.

89. Anno 22. R. 2. Thomas Percy Earl of Worcester, brother of Henry the Second Earl of Northumberland of that name, was constituted *admirallus north et south Angliæ* ; January the sixteenth, in the twenty-second year of king Richard

chard the Second, 1398, and was removed from that office, anno 2. H. 4.

Sir Thomas Percy, second son to Henry the First Earl of Northumberland, was on Saturday in Michaelmas week, the king sitting then in parliament, crowned in his Royal Majesty and holding in his hand the royal sceptre, (with other lords then advanced to higher titles) created Earl of Worcester, and made Lord Steward of the King's House; of whom no issue remaineth. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 201.

The reason of that amoval was, that Sir Thomas Percy, the Earl, and indeed the whole of the Percy house, retained their fealty and allegiance to their old master, the late king Richard the Second and his cause; and soon after with very many other Earls, Lords, Knights, &c. adherents to the late king, under the banner of Sir Henry Percy, raised an insurrection and rebellion against the reigning king, as appears from the following extract.

Rot. Parl. anno 5. H. 5. 1404. And so it was at the same time adjudged by the king and lords in parliament, that the levying of war by Sir Henry and Sir Thomas Percy was treason, as well in themselves, as in all those who were in their company at the time; except in those to whom the king had extended his

grace and favour, &c. Le roy le voet. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 242.

The Earl of Northumberland had made his submissions to the king and was pardoned and received into favour, and I believe the same with regard to his immediate connections and friends.

90. Richard Gray, Lord of Codnor, was appointed admiral of the northern coasts of England, on the twentieth day of April in the second year of king Henry the Fourth, 1400, and,

91. Thomas de Remton eques auratus, was constituted admiral of the western coasts the same day. Faustina, c. ix.

Sir Thomas Rempton, constable of the Tower and Vice-Chamberlain to the king, was in the fifth year of Henry the Fourth, elected Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and placed in the stall the eighth of the prince's side, after the death of Sir John Bouchier, and he was drowned at London Bridge, anno 7. H. 4. Harl. Manusc. 235. p. 266.

I have not yet recovered any trace from the escheat books of his possessions or heir.

Richard Grey, Lord Grey of Codnor, was elected a knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, anno 20. Ri. 2di. and placed in the stall the tenth of the prince's side, after the death of Richard Lord Fitzalan Lord Arundel, and he died anno 4. H. 4. Harl. Manusc. No. 235. p. 265.

He

He was descended from Richard Grey, created Baron of Codnor by king Henry the Third, and I believe the eighth Lord Grey of Codnor. If so, he married Elizabeth daughter and heir of Richard Bassett of Sapcote, and had two sons and two daughters. John, the ninth Lord Grey, who died without issue, and Henry the tenth Lord Grey of Codnor. His daughters, first, Catherine, married to * * * Courtney son of the Earl of Devon; and second Elizabeth, married to William Lord Zouch de Harringworth. Harl. Manusc. No. 2223. p. 76.

92. Anno 5. H. 4. 1403. Thomas Beaufort frater regis (frater uterinus regis, Otho, E. ix.) son of John of Ghent Duke of Lancaster, was constituted admiral of the northern coasts of England; and continued in that office until the twentieth day of February, anno 6. H. 4. and,

93. Thomas Lord Berkley was constituted admiral of the western coasts. Faustina, c. ix.

And the date of both the above appointments is ascertained to be the fifth day of November, anno 5. H. 4. in the manuscript. Otho, E. ix.

Thomas Beaufort Earl of Dorset, after created Duke of Exeter, son of John Plantagenet (or de Gandavo) and governor to king Henry the Sixth; was anno 1. H. 4, elected knight of
the

the most noble Order of the Garter, and placed in the stall the sixth of the prince's side, and he died anno the fifth of H. 6. Harl. Manusc. 235. temp. H. 4.

Thomas Beaufort, son of John of Ghent Duke of Lancaster, was created Duke of Exeter, anno 1. H. 5 : This Duke had the leading of the rereward at the battle of Agincourt, anno 2. H. 5 ; and after at the coronation of Henry the Sixth, he had committed to him the government of the king's person during his minority. He died at Greenwich sans issue, anno 4. H. 6. and was buried at Bury Abbey. Harl. Manusc. No. 7371. tem. H. 5.

Anno 5. H. 6. Thomas Duke of Exeter held at the time of his death the castle and manor of Nowland in Herefordshire in fee tail, with remainder to John Beaufort Earl of Somerset and his heirs ; and that the aforesaid John the son of the now Earl of Somerset, is the heir of the late Duke, aged twenty-four years.

Item, for the term of his life, by the law of England, he held the manors of great Farnale and little Farnale in the county of York, after the death of Margaret his late wife, the daughter and heir of Thomas son of Robert Neville of Hornaley knight, deceased ; and of the inheritance of Margaret, the wife of William Harrington, Knt. and John Langton, knight,

knights the next of kin and heirs to Margaret de Neville, the late wife of the late Duke Thomas Beaufort aforesaid. Claudius, c. x. 320.

Sir Thomas Berkley, Lord Berkley, was the head of a very ancient noble house the Berkleys, Barons of Dursley, who derived the Earldom of Berkley from Morrice Berkley, who married Alice the daughter and heir of Robert the son of Robert Fitz-Harding, a Dane of royal extraction, the first Earl of Berkley, created in the reign of king Henry the Second. This Sir Thomas Berkley the admiral, was the son of Morrice Berkley, who died anno 42. Ed. 3, and who was the son of Thomas Lord Berkley, who died anno 35. of king Edward the Third.

Sir Thomas Berkley the admiral, married Margaret daughter and heir of Warren Gerard Viscount Lisley, by whom he left one sole daughter and heir Elizabeth, who married Richard Beauchamp Earl of Warwick. The title descended to his younger brother James Lord Berkley, and I believe from him with some interruption in a right line down to the present Earl. Sir Thomas Berkley died anno 5. H. 5. 1416. See Harl. Manusc. No. 807. p. 5.

94. Thomas of Lancaster, the second son of king Henry the Fourth, constable of England and Prorox Hiberniæ, was constituted admiral of England the twentieth day of February anno 6. H. 4. 1404. and continued to the twenty-eighth day

of April in the following year. He was afterwards created Duke of Clarence and Earl of Albemarle. *Fauftina*, c. ix.

Thomas Plantagenet of Lancaster, after created Duke of Clarence, second son to king Henry the Fourth, was elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, anno 1. H. 4. and placed in the stall the seventh on the prince's side, after the exile of Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk and Earl of Nottingham; and he was slain besides Langoye in Anjou' on Easter-day, anno 9. H. 5. Harl. Manusc. 234.

Thomas Plantagenet, second son to king Henry the Fourth, was created Duke of Clarence in the second year of his father's reign; and in the eighth year of king Henry the Fifth he was Lieutenant general of France and Normandy; and the year after he was slain by the Duke of Alencon at Bangie Bridge, and had no issue.

Au dit Duc de Clarence al battail de Bangy fuist porte une dame de pais par une esquier nomme Estume Aragente qui la avoit gagne. Harl. Manusc. 7371. p. 30.

95. Anno 7. H. 4. 1405. Nicholas Blackburn Esq; was constituted admiral versus partes boreales Angliæ, the twenty-eighth day of April. And on the same day,

96. Nicholas Cliderfon Esq; (Clederhon in Otho, E. ix.) was made admiral versus partes occidentales Angliæ. *Fauftina*, c. ix.

97. John

97. John Beaufort Earl of Somerset, &c. was constituted admiral of England the 23d of December, anno 8. H. 4, and continued to the eighth of May following, 1407. Fauftina, c. ix.

Memorandum, in the other manuscript there is subjoined to the account of this appointment the following observation not to be found in Fauftina.

Tempore hujus admiralli tam ampla fuit jurisdicção * * * * * quod eadem est illi concessa, ad providendum in omnibus causis maritimis tam civilibus quam criminalibus, ut liquet ex libro manuscripto, penes registrum hujus curiæ, remanente signato littera D. Otho, E. ix.

N. B. This prince served before the high office of admiral of England, anno 21. Ri. 2di. Of the two preceding admirals I have not been able to recover any trace from the escheats, &c.

98. Anno 8. H. 4. 1407. Edmund Holland Earl of Kent, was constituted admiral of England May the eighth, and continued Lord Admiral in the year following until he died, on the fifteenth day of September 1407. Fauftina, c. ix.

Edmund Holland Earl of Kent was, anno 3. H. 4. elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and placed in the stall the sixth of the king's side, after the death of Edmund Earl of Stafford; and he was slain at Bryacke, anno 8. H. 4. Harl. Manusc, 235.

Anno 10. H. 4. Edmund Holland, late Earl of Kent, held at the time of his death in fee tail, certain possessions as recited in Yorkshire. The which knights fees, advowsons of priories and churches, &c. the late king Edward the Third granted to Edmund Holland, first Earl of Kent, and his heirs lawfully begotten, from whom they descended to Edmund his son and heir, who died without issue. From him they descended to John his brother, who died without issue; and from him to Joanna late Princess of Wales, his sister and heir, daughter of Edward son of the aforesaid Edward; and from the aforesaid Joanna to Thomas her son and heir; and from the said Thomas son of Thomas her husband, to the present Edmund Holland, his brother and heir, who died seized therein by virtue of the said grant, without issue of his body lawfully begotten. And the jurors find that,

1. Edmond son of Aleonora late Countess of March, one of the daughters of Thomas late Earl of Kent, and one of the sisters of the aforesaid Edmund, brother of Thomas the son of Thomas.

2. Joanna, Dutchess of York, another of the sisters.

3. Margaret, late wife of John late Earl of Somerset, the third sister.

4. Aleonora, the wife of Thomas the Earl and Countess of Sarum, the fourth sister, and,

5. Elizabeth,

5. Elizabeth, the wife of Sir John Neville knight, the fifth sister ; are next of kin and heirs of the afore-named Edmund Holland, late Earl of Kent. Vide the escheat. Claudius, c. xii. p. 159.

99. Anno 9. H. 4. 1407. Thomas Beaufort eques auratus son of John of Ghent Duke of Lancaster, by Catherine Swinford, and brother of king Henry the Fourth ; was appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, the twentieth day (the first of September in Otho) of September, anno 9. H. 4. fratris fui ; and continued in that office until the twenty-sixth day of July in the fourth year of king Henry the Sixth, 1426. hic fuit erectus in ducem Exoniensem et comitem Dorsettiensem, fuit etiam Cancellarius Angliæ, obiit 27 die Decembris, anno quinto regis prædicti nepotis fui. Faustina, c. 14.

This illustrious prince served the office of admiral of the north, anno 5. H. 4. Vide the 92d appointment.

100. Anno 5. H. 6. 1427. John de Lancaster Duke of Bedford, Earl of Richmond and Kendal, and Constable of England, son of king Henry the Fourth, and brother of king Henry the Fifth, and uncle of king Henry the Sixth ; [filius regis Henrici quinti, et patruus Henrici Sexti, (sed falso,) in Otho, E. ix.] was constituted admiral of England, Ireland, and Aquitain, on the twenty-sixth day of July, in the fourth
year

year of Henry the Sixth, his nephew ; and continued in that high office unto the fourteenth day of September, in the fourteenth year of king Henry the Sixth, 1435, on which day he died. *Faufina, c. 14.*

Acts of council, anno quarto Henrici Sexti. The Keeper of the Privy Seal ordered to make out a warrant to the Chancellor mandando eidem, that on previous inspection of certain letters patent made of and concerning the office of admiral of England, Aquitain and Ireland, granted to Thomas Duke of Exeter ; and confirmed by the grandfather and the father, and by the present king himself respectively, to the same Duke ; to cause to be made out immediately other letters patent of and concerning the said office of admiral to the Lord John Duke of Bedford, uncle of his Majesty, of the same tenor and form with the aforesaid letters patents before granted to the Duke of Exeter. The said Duke of Bedford to enjoy the said office of admiral during the Duke of Exeter's life, and afterwards during the king's pleasure. *Vide Cleopatra, F. 4.* at the date.

This wise and great prince was one of the principal supports of the throne of the infant king Henry the Sixth, during his minority, as well in England as in his French dominions. He was made president or first councillor in the council of re-
gency

gency here, whenever present in England ; and in his absence his brother the Duke of Gloucester : but his chief residence was in France, where he was appointed to the regency by the council here at the accession of king Henry the Fifth, and presided there until his death, which happened anno thirteenth of Henry the Sixth. Consistently with the plan and design of this work, I shall content myself with adding the two following extracts, in honour to this distinguished character. John Plantagenet, second son to king Henry the Fourth, was by his father created Duke of Bedford (soon after his accession) and anno 5. H. 5, he was by parliament made regent of England during the king's abode in France ; and anno 1. H. 6. he was made regent in France. He fought the battle of Verneid in Perche, where were slain of the French four Earls, a Viscount and a thousand common soldiers. He died without issue anno 13. H. 6. and was honourably buried at Roan. Harl. Manusc. 7371. temp. H. 4.

John Plantagenet Duke of Bedford third son to king Henry the Fourth, was anno the second of Henry the Fourth, elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and placed in the stall the seventh of the king's side, after the death of Edmund the Fifth son to king Edward the Third, Earl of Cambridge and Duke of York ; and he died the fourteenth of September
anno

anno 13. H. 6. and was buried honourably at Roan in Normandy.

101. Anno 14. H. 6, 1435. John Holand Duke of Exeter and Earl of Huntindon, (the same who served annis 12 and 13. R. 2. as admiral of the west Vide appointments 83 and 86); was constituted admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, October the second, anno 14. E. 3. Faustina, c. ix.

There are two things very observable in consequence of this appointment; the first is, that this grant by patent of the office was made out as well to himself as in remainder to Henry Holand his son, an infant of seven years of age only, and that too for the term of both their natural lives.

The next thing observable is, as I believe it is the first instance of the kind, and in some degree perhaps the first precedent of the office of the admiralty being put into commission, that in the twentieth year of this reign, and the sixth year of the Duke of Exeter's administration of this office; there was a commission granted immediately from the king to Sir William Iver Knt. John Heron and Miles Stapylton, Esqrs. with Sir Stephen Popham knight, commanding them to doe, keep and perform certain covenants made by indenture between them and the king, (without any mention of the name of John Holand Duke of Exeter, the Lord Admiral then existing,

existing, and as it should seem with equal powers independent of each other, as touching the governance and keeping of the sea for a certain time, according to the tenour of the said Indenture. This commission is not mentioned at all in *Fauflina*, c. ix. or in *Otho*, E. ix. nor can I find the patent in *Rymer's Manuscript Collections* of that year. There are a variety of circumstances relating to it to be found in the Minutes of the Acts of Council of the twentieth year of king Henry the Sixth, viz. at the councils held July the thirtieth, August the tenth, August the twenty-second, and August the twenty-eighth. Vide *Cleopatra*, p. 5. at the dates.

102. Anno 25. H. 6. 1447. William de la Pole Marquis and Earl of Suffolk, at the decease of John Duke of Exeter, and during the minority of Henry, now Duke, son of the aforementioned John; who, with his father, held jointly in possession or reversion the grant of the same office of High Admiral during the term of their lives, was made admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain. But on the arrival of the aforementioned minor, Henry Duke of Exeter, at the full age of twenty-one years, he gave up to him the said office; cessit ab officio illo, et tandem in exilium missus, ac in mari captus, capite plexus vitam finivit, secundo die Maii, anno 28. regis Henrici sexti. *Fauflina*, c. ix.

William de la Pole was descended lineally from Michael de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, in right of Sarah, his wife, daughter and heir of Robert Ufford, the preceding Earl, and created an. 8. R. 2.

This William de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, was created Marquis of Suffolk, September the fourteenth, in the twenty-fourth year of king Henry the Sixth. He was after created Duke of Suffolk ; of whom did descend John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln, slain with Martin Swarth, at Stokefield, in king Henry the Seventh's time ; of whom there is no issue. Harl. Manusc. 7371. at that reign.

William de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, after created Marquis and after Duke of Suffolk, was May the third, in the ninth year of king Henry the Fifth, elected a knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and placed in the stall the seventh of the prince's side, after the death of Thomas Duke of Clarence ; and he was put to death off Dover. Harl. Manusc. No. 235. at that reign.

103. Anno 28. H. 6. 1450. Henry Holand Duke of Exeter and Earl of Huntindon, son of John, late Duke of Exeter, was confirmed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitaine, the twenty-ninth of July, in the twenty-eighth year of king Henry the Sixth. *Faustina, c. ix. ad maturam ætatem perveniens viceffimo tertio die Julii predictus Johannes dux Exoniæ,*

Exoniæ, adeptus possessiones et dignitates, fit admirallus Angliæ, Hiberniæ et Aquitaniæ. Otho, E. ix.

Henry Holland Duke of Exeter and Earl of Huntingdon, was the son of John Holland Earl of Huntingdon, and afterwards created Duke of Exeter by king Richard the Second, and deprived of the dukedom by parliament, anno 1. H. 4. but afterwards restored. This Henry Duke of Exeter died without issue. I am not able to ascertain from the escheats, when he died or what were his possessions at his death; which probably devolved to the heirs of Thomas Holland Earl of Kent, his father's elder brother.

There is in Otho, E. ix. in full preservation, dated the seventh of September, anno 30. H. 6. a warrant from Henry Duke of Exeter, addressed to all seneschals, sheriffs, mayors, &c. to arrest and apprehend eighteen persons therein named to be dealt with according to law by the Admiralty Court, to be holden in Southwark, within fifteen days after the apprehension of the persons aforesaid. Otho, E. ix.

During this interval, before the next appointment entered in the manuscripts I extract from, I find a very remarkable appointment to this high office in the thirty-second year of king Henry the Sixth; when Richard Duke of York was made by parliament protector of the king and kingdom; but

am doubtful whether it ever took place in those times of confusion, as it is not at all mentioned either in Claudius, c. 14. or Otho, E. ix. If it did, it is clearly the first precedent of the office of Lord Admiral of England being held in joint commission.

Rot. Parl. anno 32. H. 6. Membr. 41. The king appoints Richard Earl of Salisbury, John Earl of Shrewsbury, John Earl of Worcester, James Earl of Wiltshire, and John Lord Stourton, with great navy of ships, and people defensible in great number; purveyed of habiliments of war, to enter with all diligence to them possible to the safeguard and keeping of the sea; and assigns to this service the subsidies of three shillings upon every ton of wine imported by merchants denizens, and six shillings if imported by merchants aliens, and one shilling in the pound on all merchandize imported or exported, (cloths only excepted) for three years, to commence from the third of April 1454.

For the term of their lives to be collected by the said Earls and Lord Stourton, and any of them surviving the others, and they to appoint the collectors in the several ports, with some exceptions for allocations to the Duke of Buckingham and others. Vide the instrument at length, Titus, E. 5. ad an.

Richard Neville Earl of Warwick and Salisbury, but no
date

date of year, of day, nor whether appointed sole, or to either district of the admiralty. Faustina, c. ix. No notice taken of any such appointment in Otho, E. ix.

104. Anno 2. E. 4. 1462. William Neville Earl of Kent and Baron Falconberg, was constituted admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, the thirtieth day of July, in the second year of king Edward the Fourth. Otho, E. ix.

This William Neville was the son of William Neville, the second son of Ralph Neville, the first Earl of Westmoreland; his father married Joanna, daughter and heir of Thomas Lord Falconberg, and in her right became Lord Falconberg; and William Neville the son, Baron Falconberg, was, anno 2. Ed. 4. created Earl of Kent. The claim probably grounded on the marriage of John Neville, Knt. with Elizabeth fifth daughter of Thomas Holland, and sister and coheir of Edmund, the last Earl of Kent of that name, and he died, leaving two daughters and coheirs. The first, Alice, married to Sir John Conyers, Knt. and the second, Eliza, married to Sir Richard Strangewith, Knt. He was taken prisoner in France, anno 3. H. 6; and anno 17. H. 6. he was elected a knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, into the stall the ninth of the prince's side, after the death of Richard Beauchamp Earl of Warwick; and he died anno 2. Ed. 4.

Vide

Vide Harl. Manusc. 154. p. 42. and Harl. Manusc. No. 7371. p. 35. and Harl. Manusc. 235. ad regnum Henrici quarti.

105. Anno 2. Ed. 4. 1462. Richard Duke of Gloucester, third son of Richard Duke of York, and brother of king Edward 4. was appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitaine, the twelfth of October, anno 2. E. 4. Otho, E. ix.

Richard Plantagenet, third son to Richard Duke of York, was created Duke of Gloucester by king Edward the Fourth. He married Anne, second daughter and one of the heirs of Richard Neville Earl of Warwick and Sarum, by whom he had issue Edmund, who died young. This Richard Duke of Gloucester was afterwards king of England, by the name of Richard the Third. Harl. Manusc. 7371. ad regnum.

Richard Plantagenet Duke of Gloucester, second brother to king Edward the Fourth, and after was king, was anno 6. E. 4. elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, into the stall the fifth of the king's side, after the putting away of John de Foix Earl of Kendal, anno 3. E. 4. and he was slain beside Bosworth, the twenty-second day of August at Radnor field, anno Domini 1485, and the third year of his reign. Harl. Manusc. 235. ad regnum.

106. Anno 49, H. 6. (or rather it should have been 10. E. 4.) 1470, Richard Neville Earl of Warwick. Faustina, c. ix.

Earl

Earl of Warwick and Sarum was appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitaine January the second, anno 49. H. 6. He was too Governor of Calais and Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Constable of the Castles of Calais and Dover, Otho, E. ix.

Richard Neville, eldest son of Richard Neville Earl of Salisbury was, after his death, created Earl of Sarum; he married Anne the fourth daughter of Richard Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, (and after the death of Henry Beauchamp, her brother, created Duke of Warwick, without issue); in her right he was Earl of Warwick. This Richard Neville Earl of Warwick and Sarum had two daughters and heirs; first, Isabell, married to Richard Duke of Clarence, son to king Edward the Fourth; and second, Anne, married to Richard Duke of Gloucester (brother to king Edward the Fourth) and after king of England, by name of Richard the Third. Harl. Manusc. 7371.

Richard Neville Earl of Warwick and Sarum was on the eighth of February, anno 39. H. 6. elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter to the stall the ninth of the sovereign's side, by the death of Humfry Stafford Earl of Buckingham. And anno 1. Ed. 4. installed in the stall the third of the king's side, after the death of Richard Plantagenet Duke of York: and he was slain at Barnet field, anno

10. Ed. 4. on Easter-Day 1470, and buried in St. Paul's church. Harl. Manusc. 235.

107. Anno 11. Ed. 4. Richard Duke of Gloucester, no date in either manuscript of the appointment, which is properly only the revival of Richard Duke of Gloucester's appointment, anno 2. E. 4, interrupted during a few months by the temporary ascendancy of king Henry the Sixth's party, in their efforts to recover him his crown, and which were totally frustrated by their defeat at Barnet.

108. Anno 1. R. 3. 1484. John Howard Duke of Norfolk was appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitaine, July the twenty-fifth, in the latter end of the first year of king Richard the Third's reign, 1484. Otho, E. ix.

John Howard, Lord Howard, created Duke of Norfolk and Marshal of England by king Richard the Third. He was the son of Sir Robert Howard, knight, and of Margaret, daughter and one of the heirs of Thomas Lord Mowbray Duke of Norfolk, Earl of Nottingham, and Marshal of England. This John Howard had issue Thomas Earl of Surrey, and after created Duke of Norfolk by king Henry the Eighth. Harl. Manusc. 7371. ad regnum.

John Lord Howard, afterwards created Duke of Norfolk, was anno 10. E. 4. elected knight of the most noble Order of
the

the Garter into stall the tenth of the prince's side, after the death of Richard Earl Rivers ; but after translated to the stall the fifth of the sovereign's side, after the translating of king Richard the Third ; and he was slain at Radnor field beside Bosworth, the twenty-second of August anno 3. R. 3. 1485. Harl. Manusc. 235.

109. Anno 1. H. 7. 1485. John de Vere Earl of Oxford was constituted admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, on the twenty-seventh day of September, anno 1. H. 7, for the term of his life. He was Great Chamberlain of England and Constable of the Tower of London, and he continued in those offices unto the tenth day of March, in the fourth (the fifth in Otho, E. ix.) year of king Henry the Eighth, on which day he died. Faustina, c. 14.

John Vere Earl of Oxford, Lord Great Chamberlain and Lord Admiral, was anno 1. H. 7. elected a knight of the most noble Order of the Garter into stall the fifth of the king's side, after the death of John Howard Duke of Norfolk ; and he died on Thursday the 10th of March, at four of the clock in the morning, at Lymington Castle, anno 4. H. 8. Harl. Manusc. 235.

110. Anno 4. H. 8. 1512. Edward Howard was constituted admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain (Faustina, c.

ix.) and he died the fifteenth day of May, in the fifth year of Henry the Eighth, at his Castle at Henningham, Otho, E. ix.

Anno 4: H. 8. August 15, Edward Howard, Knt. appointed admiral of England, Ireland, &c. Vide Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 22. art. 57.

111. Anno 5. H. 8. Thomas Howard, Knt. Lord Howard was appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, on the fifteenth of May, afterwards Duke of Norfolk (May 28, an. 25. H. 8. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 22.) He translated the five articles inquirable in the admiralty court. Otho, E. ix.

112. Anno 17. H. 8. 1525. Henricus filius Nothus regis Henrici octavi ex Elizabetha Blunt genitus, dux Richmondia et Somersettia, et comes Nottinghamia; constituitur admiralus Anglia, Hibernia et Aquitania, sextodecimo die Julii, anno 17. H. 8; et permanfit in eodem officio usque ad viceffimum secundum diem, anno viceffimo octavo ejusdem regni, quo die vitam cum morte commutavit apud sanctum Jacobum juxta Westmonasterium, et apud Thetfordiam corpus ejus sepulchro traditur. In his time the statutes of the twenty-seventh and twenty-eighth of king Henry the Eighth, relating to piracy, were passed. Otho, E. ix.

Anno 17. H. 8. Henry Fitzroy created Earl of Nottingham, Duke of Richmond and Somerset, in one day:
he

he died without issue. Harleian Manuscript, 7371. Otho, E. ix.

Henry Duke of Richmond and Somerset was elected knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, June 25, anno 17. H. 8. first into the stall the second of the king, by translating Charles the Fifth, the Emperor, and last into the stall the third of the prince's side, by translating Thomas Duke of Norfolk; and he died anno 27. H. 8. Harl. Manusc. 235.

Anno 17. H. 8. Henry Fitzroy Earl of Nottingham created Duke of Richmond and Somerset in uno die; and July the sixteenth the same appointed High Admiral of England, Wales and Ireland for life. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 22. art. 57.

113. Anno 28. H. 8. William Fitzwilliam Earl of Southampton and Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, eques auratus, Treasurer of the king's household, was constituted admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitaine, the twenty-eighth of August, in the twenty-ninth year of king Henry the Eighth, 1536. Faustina, c. ix.

Anno 28. H. 8. William Fitzwilliam created Earl of Southampton; no issue remaining. Harl. Manusc. 7371.

Sir William Fitzwilliam was, May the sixteenth anno 28. H. 8, appointed Great Admiral of England, Wales, &c. and also October the eighteenth, anno 29. H. 8. 1537,

created Earl of Southampton. Harleian Manuscript, 5177. p. 22.

114. Anno 32. H. 8. 1540. Johannes Russell eques auratus Lord Russell, was appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, on the twenty-eighth of July. Otho, E. ix. July 18th. Faustina, c. 14.

Anno 32. H. 8. July 28. John Russell, Great Admiral of England. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 22.

Anno H. 8. John Russell created Lord Russell, and after by king Edward the Sixth Earl of Bedford. Harl. Manusc. 7371.

115. John Dudley was appointed admiral of England, &c. the twenty-seventh day of June, anno 34 H. 8. 1543. Faustina, c. ix.

Anno H. 8. John Sutton, alias Dudley, descended of the second brother of John Baron of Dudley, was created Viscount Lisley, in the right of Elizabeth, his mother, daughter and heir to Edward Grey Viscount Lisley. He was after created Earl of Warwick and Duke of Northumberland by king Edward the Sixth. Harl. Manusc. 7371. ad regnum Henrici octavi.

Anno 1. H. 6. John Dudley Viscount Lisley, Baron of Sondy Bassett and Tres and Lord Dudley, was, February the seventeenth,

seventeenth, anno 1. E. 6. within the Tower of London, created Duke of Northumberland and Earl of Warwick, and Earl Marshal of England. He had issue Ambrose Dudley Earl of Warwick, and Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester. Harl. Manusc. 7371 ad regnum Ed. 6.

John Dudley Viscount Lisle, February the sixteenth, anno 1. Ed. 6, created Earl of Warwick; and February the seventeenth Great Chamberlain of England, for one day only, namely, king Edward the Sixth's coronation.

John Dudley Viscount Lisle was, June the twenty-sixth, anno 34. H. 8. 1543. made Great Admiral of England, Wales, &c. He was also (Vide appointment 117.) anno 2. E. 6. 1547, a second time appointed admiral of England, Ireland, Wales, &c. and the twentieth of February Great Master of the king's household for life. Vide Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 22. and 23.

Anno 3. Ed. 6. 1548. John Dudley Earl of Warwick constituted admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitaine, October the twenty-eighth, anno 3. Ed. 6. He was also Viscount Lisle, Knight of the Garter, Great Admiral of England, Ireland, Wales, Calais, Bolognia, and of the Marshes there, and of Normandy, Gascony and Aquitaine; also Commander in Chief (*præfectus generalis*) of the fleet and of the marine of
the

the aforesaid king; and Lord Great Master (*dominus magnus magister*) of the king's household, and President of the Council of the whole of the Principality of Wales, and of the Marches there. Otho, E. ix.

In the list of the Knights of the Garter, in Harl. Manusc. 235, he is thus entered; John Sutton Viscount Lisle, after created Earl of Warwick and Duke of Northumberland, was April the twenty-third elected, and May the twenty-fifth installed, anno 35. H. 8, in the stall the ninth of the king, by the translating of Thomas Lord Audley of Walden; and last, after divers translations he came to the stall the fourth of the prince's side, by the removing of Henry Grey Duke of Suffolk; and he was beheaded at Tower-hill, anno 1. Mariæ reginæ. Harl. Manusc. 235. ad regnum H. 8.

116. Thomas dominus de Sancto Mauro Lord Seymour was constituted admiral of England, Ireland, Wales, Calais, Bologna, &c. February the seventeenth, anno 1. E. 6. 1546. Otho, E. ix.

Anno 1. E. 6. Thomas Seymour, brother to Edward Duke of Somerset, was created Lord Seymour of Sudley; and died without issue.

Anno 1. E. 6. February the sixteenth, Thomas Seymour, knight, created Baron Seymour. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 22.

Anno

Anno 1. E. 6. August 30. Thomas Seymour, Knt. made great admiral of England, &c. and February the seventeenth, created Baron Seymour Rot. Pat. 6. prs. 1. E. 6. Id. ibidem.

117. Anno 3. E. 6. John Dudley Earl of Warwick appointed October the twenty-eighth, anno 3. E. 6. 1548. admiral of England, &c. the same as to the appointment 115, anno 34. H. 8. Otho, E. ix.

118. Edward Clinton Lord Clinton, appointed anno 4. E. 6, (Faustina, c. ix.) but no date of the appointment, nor farther particulars. Vide appointment 120.

Anno 4. E. 6, May 14. Edward Lord Clinton made admiral of England and Ireland. Harl. Manusc, 5177. p. 23.

119. William Howard Baron of Effingham, no date, anno primo reginæ Mariæ, 1553. Faustina, c. ix.

Lord William Howard, third son of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, was created Baron of Effingham, and had issue. Harl. Manusc. 7371.

Anno 1. R. Mariæ, 1553. William Lord Howard, created March the eleventh Baron Howard of Effingham; was March the twenty-sixth appointed great admiral of England, Ireland, &c. for life. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 23.

William Howard, Lord Admiral, was elected a knight of most noble Order of the Garter, in queen Mary's reign. Claudius, 18. c. 17. p. 175.

120. Edward Clinton, Lord Clinton and Say, the same as appointment 118, was annis 3d and 4th of Philip and Mary, 1556, made great admiral of England for life, February the tenth, anno 4. Philip and Mary. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 23.

Edward Fynes, Lord Clinton and Say, was March the fourth 1572, anno 14. Eliz. created Earl of Lincoln. He died January the sixteenth, anno 27. of queen Eliz. 1584. Henry Earl of Lincoln, his son, held possessions to the value of 375l. per annum in Lincolnshire. In quis post obit. Harl. Manusc. No. 4125. p. 222. and 224.

121. Anno 27. Eliz. 8 pars Pat. Charles Howard, knight of the Garter, Baron of Effingham, son of William the late baron and admiral (appointment 119,) was made admiral of England, Ireland and Aquitain, on the eighth day of July, anno 27. queen Eliz. anno D. 1586. Faustina, c. ix.

Anno 27. Eliz. July the eighth, Charles Lord Howard, great admiral of England for life.

Anno 30. Eliz. * * * 17th, 1788, A commission to Charles Lord Howard, great admiral of England, to be Lieutenant of the whole fleet going out against the Spaniards . . .

Anno . . . R. Eliz. created Earl of Nottingham, and

Anno 1. Jacobi, March the tenth, he was created Constable of England for one day only, namely the coronation of king James. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 24. Anno

Anno 16. Jacobi, Feb. 19, a grant to Charles Earl of Nottingham, of the place and precedence of John Lord Mowbray, his progenitor, in parliament and elsewhere. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 27.

122. Anno 9. of king James, Charles Duke of York appointed admiral of England, Ireland and Wales during life, in reversion, the twenty-seventh day of January, in the ninth year of king James, 1611.

Charles Duke of York, upon the death of his brother Henry, king James's eldest son; anno 14. Jacobi, Nov. 4. was created Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester, to himself and his heirs, kings of England. Anno 17 of James, October the fifth, a grant to Charles Prince of Wales of an annuity of 20867l. 5s. 7d. to himself and his heirs, kings of England. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 26. and 27.

This unfortunate prince acceded to the throne of England, March 27, 1625, and was beheaded January 30, 1648.

C H A P T E R II.

Of the Size, Tonnage, and Construction of the Ships; their Complement of Men, Victualling, the Number of Officers, their Pay, and that of the Mariners and Soldiers, on board the Navy of England, during the Fourteenth Century.

FROM the extreme scarcity of nautical information in the manuscripts of the reign of king Edward the Third, and the following reigns, during the fourteenth century; and that almost total silence they observe, with respect to the minutiae of the internal constitution, arrangement, and direction of the English Navy during that period; renders it difficult in the extreme, if not impossible, to give a full, minute and distinct account of the particulars I here propose to treat of, with the definite precision and accuracy I could have wished, for the information and entertainment of the reader.

By collecting, however into one point of view the detached, scattered minutiae and particles of information, circumstances and facts, still to be met with here and there in those manuscripts;

cripts ; and by reasoning upon these data by analogy and comparison with more modern accounts and later informations and arrangements, and which gradually open and become much more copious, minute, distinct and definite ; we may perhaps be able to attain as minute, full and comprehensive an idea of all these particulars, as we can reasonably expect or desire at this distance of time. Under this idea I flatter myself that the reader, as he proceeds with me in the following sheets, will find just ground and reason to coincide with me in opinion, that I am founded in the following general and particular observations.

First, I will beg leave to premise as a general observation applicable to every thing I have to say in this work ; that it appears to me that the general outline of the arrangement, constitution and government, as well internal as external, of the English Navy, as to all and every of the particulars I have above undertaken to speak to ; has continued nearly the same with very little variation, from the beginning of king Edward the Third's reign to the reigns of king Henry the Eighth, Edward the Sixth, king Philip and queen Mary, and even so low down, as to the fortieth year of queen Elizabeth 1597, a period of two hundred and seventy years. I would be understood however with some grains of allowance. There are

some variations in the pay of the soldiers and mariners, but not very material, at different times, and in the prices of victualling, &c. but such as may be easily accounted for from the different value of money and from the difference of years of plenty or scarcity, at the respective periods. In the later reigns the marine officers were more in number, but the appointments the same; for instance, in king Henry the Sixth's reign, a great ship had one Master (the first properly speaking marine officer on board) and one Quarter-Master; in queen Elizabeth's reign a ship of the same tonnage and complement of men or less, had a Master, four Quarter-Masters, and four Second Quarter-Masters of inferior pay to the others, &c. and lastly, the addition in the latter reigns of great guns and gunners, of which there were none at all made use of on ship-board, during the whole of the fourteenth century. Almost in every other respect I believe, except the above particulars, the unity of arrangement, appareillement and disposition of the English marine, is strikingly similar if not uniformly the same in all the intermediate intervals of the whole period of time above-named. The reason why I go down so low into the sixteenth century for information, in some points relating to the navy is, because it is there only I am able first to discover them ascertained and delineated with a minute, definite and correct accuracy

curacy and precision ; and my motive too for taking this method is, because in those points of minute and analytical arrangement and internal disposition of the marine of England, where the earlier manuscripts are totally silent, and not a tittle of information to be gained ; it appears to me fair reasoning and just analogy to suppose, all such particulars to have been arranged and regulated upon similar, or nearly similar principles in the fourteenth century, with what we find actually to have been the case in such particulars in the sixteenth century ; without any farther deviation or variation than is observable in the greater outlines, defined and ascertained with equal accuracy and precision in both periods of time. The author, however, is justly sensible that liberties of this kind are not to be taken but with a cautious well-weighed deliberation and probable grounds of presumption only, and refers to the candour of the public to decide with regard to whatever he may venture to hazard in this way of conjecture in the following sheets, how far he may or may not have exceeded the just limits of cautious prudence and reserve in such particular instances.

The next more immediate observation I would wish to premise is, that it does not appear that in those early days, the reign of king Edward the Third and the following, there was any considerable navy of king's ships kept up, or indeed any great
ships

ships built of a larger size than eight hundred or a thousand tons, or of a stronger construction for the purposes of war merely. And the reason of this, probably, because from the mode of fighting in those days, before the invention and use of great guns and gunpowder on board ships, which was only with arrows and spears before boarding, and with the addition of swords and battle-axes in close engagement, it was of no consequence that the ships should be of larger tonnage or stronger construction for fighting than for the transport or merchants service.

In the English fleet which went out upon this great expedition in 1345, and which, as will be seen hereafter, consisted of seven hundred ships, manned by 14451 mariners, there are only mentioned fifty large ships, or as it is expressed in one manuscript, ships of forstige, in the whole number. Of these fifty, twenty-five were the king's ships, manned by four hundred and nineteen men, that is, at an average rather less than seventeen mariners to a ship. We are to remember, however, that in all the armaments from king Edward's time even down to queen Elizabeth's, there was always a greater proportion of the soldiery serving on board every ship of war, namely, Knights Esquires, Men at Arms and Archers; than of the mariners, and constituting a greater part and proportion of its necessary
com-

complement of men. The remaining twenty-five of the fifty large ships are called London ships, manned by six hundred and sixty-two mariners, or at an average nearly twenty-six men each ship. What was the precise tonnage and complement of mariners and soldiers on board any individual ship of these fifty large ships, or indeed of any others of the whole fleet cannot now be ascertained, inasmuch as the ships of different rates were promiscuously stationed together in the different ports; and in the only complete list perhaps now in preservation of that immense armament, and which I mean to insert at length hereafter at the end of this volume; the returns from each of the ports are made in one general aggregate of ships and mariners, without any distinct specification of the several ships, or their complements severally; as the quota to be furnished by each port. With regard to that part of their complement which consisted of men at arms and archers, they are not mentioned at all in the port returns, but were ordered to join the fleet at certain ports of rendezvous fixed upon for that purpose; namely, the port of Southampton for the western division; Sandwich for the eastern, and Yarmouth, I believe, for the northern division. The whole of the military embarked amounted to 26804 men. And their specific returns were made under the banners

ners of the several Earls, Barons, Knights and Esquires, who raised or led them to this expedition ; as will be particularly stated hereafter, when we come to treat of the military department.

There are indeed in the naval list above referred to, a few single ships named with their complements of mariners only, which may be of some little assistance towards forming an idea upon this question. For instance, from Polerwan one ship with sixty mariners ; from Kardiffe, one ship and fifty-one mariners ; and from the list of foreign auxiliaries annexed to the other, one ship from Ireland, with 184 mariners, which from its number of mariners one would imagine must have been the largest in the whole armament.

But after all the best guide to form a just idea of this question will be from different lists of other navies in subsequent ages, wherever they are given with a minute definite precision and accuracy, as to these particulars. And the first I shall mention is from the fourth year of king Henry the Fifth, 1415, when the king's navy of that year was as by the following list, consisting of twenty-four ships, six great ships, eight barges, and ten balingers.

Anno

No. I.

Anno 4. Hen. 5. 1415.

Les noms des Niefs et des vasseaux du Roy.

Six grands Niefs. — La Trinité,
Le Seynt Esprit,
3 Carrakes,
Le Nicholas.

Huit Barges. — La Katharine,
Le Gabriel,
Le Thomas,
La Marie,
Le Rooderoge,
La petite Trinité,
Et deux autres.

Dix Balingers. — Le Gurge,
La Rue,
Le Gabriel de Barfleur,
Le Crachere,
Le James,
Le Cigne,
Le Petite Joan,
Le Nicholas,
Et deux autres.

Sum total vingt-quatre.

Cottonian MSS. Cleopatra, F. 3. ad an. 4. H. 5.

It appears too from the above paper that those of the above ships which were in commission, (which I conjecture were not more than three of the first division, six of the second, and eight of the Balingers,) were manned from the twenty-fourth of June, to All Saints day, being one quarter and thirty-nine days by

- 50 Men at arms, at twelve pence per day.
- 150 Archers, at six pence per day. And
- 4 Masters, at six pence per day,
- 250 Mariners, at three pence per day, for that time.

From which it appears that there were rather an inferior proportion of the men at arms and archers used in manning the ships of, &c. of this year to the mariners. The same we may very fairly suppose was the uniform practice of those times in manning the king's ships of war even in king Edward the Third's reign; and that the proportions of the soldiers and mariners in the crews of the king's ships were adjusted nearly in a similar way; half men at arms and archers and half mariners, from that time to queen Elizabeth's reign, as will be seen hereafter. But this great armament of 1345 was in the proportion of 26,804 soldiers to 14,451 mariners; and this probably because it was intended to act chiefly by land.

2. There is in the Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 134, &c. a
most

most curious and valuable paper, entitled an ordinance for the keeping of the navy, passed by the parliament, anno 20. of Henry the Sixth, anno Domini 1441, copied from the great rolls, m. 30. of that year, which states and regulates the navy establishment of that year, with a minuteness, accuracy and precision so very superior to any thing I have met with before in those early ages, that I am persuaded a more particular account of it will prove an acceptable communication to all my readers.

No. II. Anno 20. H. 6. 1441.

In the preamble the Commons pray that it may please his Majesty, for the safe keeping of the sea, to ordain and authorize, by the authority of the present parliament, certain articles and appointments contained in a schedule to this bill annexed, and to the following purport.

For as much as it is thought by all the Commons of this land that it is necessary the sea to be kept, there must be made purveyance for certain ships described in manner and form after following.

First, it is thought that the least purveyance that can be made for the worship of the king, and welfare and defence of this realm, is to have upon the sea for the season of the year, from Candlemas to Martinmas, eight ships with four stages. The which ships as it is thought must have the one with the

other one hundred and fifty men. Total twelve hundred men.

Item, every great ship must have in its company a barge and a balinger, and every barge must have in it eighty men. Total 640 men.

Item, the eight balingers must have each of them forty men. Total 320 men.

Item, there must be awaiting and attendant upon them four spinaces, in each twenty-five men. Total one hundred men.

Sum total of the men 2260, each man having two shillings per month, amounteth to 226l. per month.

Item, twenty-four Masters, each of them over this forty pence in the month. Total 4l.

Item, over their rewards for the Quarter Masters, by the month, four pounds. Total of the wages 334l. per month.

Item, victualling for the month, draweth at fourteen pence the man in the week. Total 527l. 6s. 8d. per month.

The sum total, by the month, in victualling and wages, amounteth to 861l. 13s 8d. and at this rate,

The sum total for six months for this year 5168l. and for eight months yearly following, during the grant of the subsidies for two years upon wines and merchandize imported and exported. Total 6890l. 13s. 8d. Item,

Item, it is to be remembered where the said ships should be had. 1. The Nicholas of the Tower at Bristol. 2. The Katherine of the Burtows, at Dartmouth. 3. The Spanish ship that was the Lord Pouns, at ditto. 4. Sir Philip Courtneys, at the port of London. 5. The Trinity, at ditto. 6. The Thomas, at Hull. That called Taurners the 7th, named Grace a Dieu, at ditto. Item, 8. The George, at Newcastle.

Item, eight barges to be had, 1. of Harry Russell of Weymouth. 2. Of Philip Courtney, knight. 3. At Plymouth, called Manlake, in Saltafh Water. 4. Called the Mary, of ----- Morfores, at Winchelfea. 5. The Pratt barge, called Trinity, at Winchelfea. 6. One of de Bewfitz and Berlynes, called Valentine, at London. 7. A barge, called Slags, at Saltafh. 8. A Barge, ----- at Falmouth.

Also, eight Ballyngers. The 1st, at Newcastle, with the great ships there. 2. Of Sir Philip Courtney. 3. Called Palmers, of Sir William Bouvill, at Foway. 4. At Dover, a ballinger, called Pygfygg, of Wards and Cooks. 5. At Sandwych, a ballinger, of Haywards. 6. At Southampton, of Clifdons, called Jacket. 7. At St. Ofyths, in Effex.----- 8, Per Church -----, at London.

Item, There must be had four Spinaces. The 1st, one of Harry Russells. 2. One at Hastings. 3. One at Dartmouth. 4. One at Dartmouth.

Item,

Item, it is thought that there should be chosen and named eight knights and worthy esquires of the west, of the south, and of the north; so that no country should be displeased, and thereof the king our sovereign Lord choose such one as him liketh to be a chief Captain, and other seven as the king liketh of the said eight for to attend the said chief Captain, so that every great ship have a Captain within board.

Item, it is to remember that the king will give them in charge by his officers to them sent, that all the said ships stuffed and arrayed make their first assemble in the Humber; there to obey such rule and governance, as by their Captains and Under-captains shall to them be ordained, and there muster to be seen of such persons as the king will depute thereto by his commission.

Item, there such proclamation and ordinance to be made and established amongst and in the said navy, that none of our ships harm ne hurt none other ship of our friends; where through any trouble or breaking of peace might fall between the king our sovereign Lord and other of his friends.

Item, it is thought necessary that if any ship or ships so taken as enemies, when the goods in the same ship be brought into any port, that the goods ne the ship be not disperbled, ne divided unto the time that it be duly known whether it is
 enemy's

enemy's goods or friends goods ; forseen always that the proof be made within fix weeks after the landing and havening of the said ship or ships and goods so taken.

Item, this article provides that in case of arrest of any ship for the king's service, where the owner does not set Master nor mariners in the ship to take care of the ship and the freight ; in case during its voyage under the arrest bulk is broke or any part of the cargoe embezzled, the owner of the ship shall be answerable to owner of the goods for so much only as came to his hands, and in that case his evidence upon oath to be admitted if confirmed by the oath of two or three of his credible neighbours with him, and himself to be acquitted.

Item, this article provides, that in case any of the above named ships, barges, ballingers or pinnaces happened or allotted to this service be not in England or in the ports afore-named or may not be had: that then the Captain (knight), or in his absence the Under-captain the esquire, to the ship or ships so wanting, shall have full power to choose and appoint at his discretion other like and fitting ship or ships to supply their place.

Item, it is thought that the goods and ships that may happen to be taken by them, or by any of them, in the sea of any enemies, shall be departed (divided) in the form after shewen.

That

That is to say, the Masters of the ships, Quarter-masters, shipmen and foldiers shall have half the ships and goods so taken ; and the other half of the ships and goods shall be departed in three, of which the owners of the ships, barges, ballingers and spinnaces shall have two parts, and the chief Captain and the Under-captain that third part (remaining); of the which third part the chief Captain shall have double that one part the Under-captain shall have.

Item, that the fourth part of the half fifteenth now granted (after the form of exception and deduction * stated in the same grant) be arreared by the collectors thereto appointed ; to be received and paid into the receipt of his Majesty's Exchequer by the month of Easter next, and that proportion of the sum to be issued thence and

* The act Rot. Par. 20. H. 6. m. 8. The parliament grant for the defence of the realm and for the keeping of the sea, 2s. per ton on wine, one shilling on the pound on merchandize imported and exported, on condition that the fourth of the half fifteenth and xth be applied and employed as specified in a former grant passed and for the safe keeping of the sea only. Harl. MSS. No. 16. p. 127. As to the deductions mentioned in the Act 20. H. 6. m. 5. it expressly enacts a deduction of 4000l. out of the amount of the xth and xvth then granted in relief and discharge of poor towns, cities, burghs desolate, wasted and destroyed, or over greatly impoverished, or over greatly charged ; to be apportioned by Commissioners, one Lord and two Knights in every county, and farther appoints a specific relief and subtraction to the following places. 1. To the lay people of Lincoln subjects, to be discharged for ever wholly of their proportion. 2. To those, of Cheltenham, Gloucestershire, one-half of the said xvth and xth. 3. Alford, in Hampshire, one-half. 4. Of Andover Wilts one-half of ditto. 5. Of Scarborough, Yorkshire, one-half. 6. Of Heddington, Oxfordshire, one-half, and, 7. Of Yarmouth, Norfolk, of one quarter of said xth and xvth. Harl. Manusc. 16. p. 125.

delivered

delivered to the chief Captains and Under-captains by the king to be named by Indenture for the said governance and keeping of the sea, and to none other use: which keeping shall begin the fifteenth day of May next coming, and to endure to the fifteenth day of November then next sueing; and then (in the year following) at the first day of March the keeping of the sea, to begin in manner and form as is aforesaid, to endure for the term of eight months then next following.

And a farther payment to be made of the tonnage and poundage in this parliament granted by the Treasurer of England for the time being, to such Captain and Captains as by the king shall be named by indenture as before, after the rate of the said six months, and so forth in the next year following in semblable wise.

Alway foreseen that if the said Captains or any of them, or any of their men under them, absent himself out of the sea any of the months or part of them, aforesaid; that then he or they be disallowed so much of their wages as the rate comes to for the time of their absence; less than the said Captain or Captains or any men under them, leave a sufficient man or so many sufficient men in their stead for the time of their absence.

Item, that none of the said vessels ne none other vessel to be had in the stead of any of them attending to the sam

voyage, be arrested for any voyage of our said sovereign Lord the King appointed or to be appointed, ne to no other use for the year afore said.

Response. Soit fait come il est desire durant le temps de la fauf garde de la mere deinz especifie. Extracted from Harl. Manusc. No, 16. p. 134. 137.

No. III.

Names of the King's ships, anno 9. H. 8. 1517, in the Thames.

Henry Grace de Dieu, 12 men,	Mary James, 1 man,
Katherine Fortune, 4 men,	Henry Hamton, 3 men,
Gabriel Royal, 4 men,	Lyzard, 2 men,
The Great Barbara, 4 men,	Two Robarges, 2 men,
John Baptist, 4 men,	Rose Galley, 1 man,
Mary and Rose, 4 men,	Katherine Galley, 1 man,
Great Back, 4 men,	Great Nicholas, 1 man,
Peter Pomegranate, 3 men,	Sovereign, 1 man,
Marye George, 4 men,	Great Galley, 10 men.
Mary John, 3 men,	Sir Edward Haward, knt. admiral by indenture. Otho, E. ix.
Lesse Back, 3 men,	

In the Cottonian Manuscript, Otho, E. ix. I find, besides the last fleet out of commission and laid up in port, three lists of the English navy, in different years, in the sixteenth century, which, for the reasons before recited, appear to me highly

highly deserving of insertion, not merely as curious, valuable pieces of information in themselves of the specific years they belong to, but as they will serve very materially to illustrate and confirm those fainter sketches and important outlines we derive from the earlier manuscript accounts of the fourteenth century relative to this subject.

IV. The first of these I conjecture to be of the date of the latter end of king Henry the Eighth's, or beginning of Edward the Sixth's reign. Circiter, anno 1546.

Shippes for the Summer season.

1. 500 The Great Backe, the tonnage and respective numbers of souldiers, mariners, and gunners, complement of men burned so as to be illegible, the total 300

Tonnage.	Shippes.	Souldiers.	Mariners.	Gunniers.	Tot.Men.
2. 400	The lefs Backe,	105	— 112	— 23	— 240
3. 300	The Sweepstake,	100	— 109	— 20	— 230
4. 300	The Hart,		180	— 20	— 200
5. 300	The Antelope,		180	— 20	— 200
6. 240	The Swallow,		142	— 18	— 160
7. 200	The new Back,		124	— 16	— 140
8. 200	The Greyhound,		124	— 16	— 140
9. 50	The Flower de Luce,		56	— 4	— 60
10 50	The Double Rose,		56	— 4	— 60

Total of the Portage or tonnage - - - 2640
 Souldiers 341, mariners 1221, gunners 163. Total of men 1730
 Wages, foldiers 341, per month, of 28 days, at 5s. every
 man, - - - amounteth to £. 85 5 0
 Mariners 1221 and gunners 163, per month, at 8s. each
 dead shares and rewards in the same accounted, £555 12 0

 Total £640 5 0

Victuals of 1730 men for one month, at 8s. 4d.
 every man, with necessaries accounted, amounteth
 to - - - - £. 720 16 8
 Sum of one month's charge of wages and victuals for
 1730 men, £.1361 xxd. Cot. MSS. Otho, E. ix.

Shippes for winter use, in dorso of the same paper.

1. The Pauncy,—450 tons—foldiers, mariners, gunners,
 the number of each burned. But legible total men 300

Tonnage.	Shippes.	Soldiers.	Mariners.	Gunners.	Tot.Men.
2. 500	The Muregan,	138	— 142	— 20	— 300
3. 400	The Mary Hambro,	108	— 120	— 18	— 246
4. 180	The Jennet,		104	— 16	— 120
5. 140	The Dragon,		104	— 16	— 120
6. 140	The Lion,		104	— 16	— 120

7. The

7.	80	The Phauton,	62	—	8	—	70
8.	80	The Hind,	54	—	6	—	60
9.	40	The Phenix,	44	—	6	—	50
10.	140	The Ma Willoby,	36	—	80	—	14 — 130

Total of tonnage 2150.

Total foldiers 418, mariners 954, gunners 144, in all 1516

Wages of 418 foldiers, per month, of 28 days, at 5s.

each, - - - - - £. 104 10 0

Of 1098 mariners and gunners, at 8s. each, dead

shares and rewards in the same accounted, £. 429 13 4

Total £. 543 1 2

Victual of the said 1516 men, per month, at 8s.

4d. each man, with necessaries, - £. 63^I 4 0

Total charge of one month, - - £. 1175 7 4

Cottonian Manuscript, Otho, E. ix.

V. The next is the list of the Navy of England as I conjecture at the beginning of queen Elizabeth's reign.

The Fleet, anno Elizabeth.

Tonnage.	Shippers.	Mariners.	Gunners.	Soldiers.	Tot.Men.
1. 1000	The Triumph,	340	— 30	— 130	— 500
2. 900	— Elizabeth,	340	— 30	— 130	— 500
				3. Tonnage.	

	Tonnage.	Shippes.	Mariners.	Gunners.	Soldiers.	Tot. Men.
3.	800	The White Bear,	340	— 30	— 120	— 490
4.	800	— Arke Rawley,	290	— 30	— 110	— 430
5.	800	— Victory,	290	— 30	— 110	— 430
6.	650	— The Pope, now the Assurance,	175	— 25	— 76	— 270
7.	500	— Nonpareille,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
8.	500	— Mary Rose,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
9.	500	— Lion,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
10.	500	— Bonadventure,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
11.	500	— Revenge, lost by Greenfield,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
12.	500	— Vauntgard,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
13.	500	— Rainbow,	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
14.	500	— Rainbow 2d	150	— 24	— 76	— 250
15.	360	— Dreadnought,	120	— 24	— 40	— 184
16.	330	— Swiftsure,	120	— 24	— 40	— 184
17.	300	— Antelope,	120	— 20	— 30	— 170
18.	300	— Swallow, decayed	120	— 20	— 30	— 170
19.	260	— Foresight,	110	— 20	— 20	— 150
20.	180	— Ayde, decayed,	90	— 16	— 14	— 120
21.	160	— Tyger, decayed,	80	— 12	— 8	— 100
22.	160	— Bull, decayed,	80	— 12	— 8	— 100
23.	120	— Scoute, decayed,	55	— 8	— 7	— 70
						23.

	Tonnage.	Shippes.	Mariners.	Gunners.	Soldiers.	Tot.Men.
24.	120	— Cremontany,	55	— 8	— 7	— 70
25.	120	— Achates,	45	— 8	— 7	— 60
26.	—	— Gally bona volgr.	200	— 80	— 63	— 343
27.	70	— Charles,	36	— 4	— 9	— 49
28.	60	— Moone,	34	— 4	— 0	— 38
29.	35	— Makeshift,	31	— 4	— 0	— 35
30.	35	— Spie,	31	— 4	— 0	— 35
31.	35	— Advice,	31	— 4	— 0	— 35
32.	35	— The Marlion,	20	— 4	— 0	— 24
33.	40	— Sunne,	26	— 4	— 0	— 30
34.	30	— Truft,	18	— 2	— 0	— 20
35.	—	— Burgandine,	33	— 2	— 0	— 35
36.	15	— Greyhound,	10	— 0	— 0	— 10
37.	10	— George,	16	— 4	— 0	— 20
			4302	555	1405	6262

The Acquittance,	205	The Defiance,	600
The Crane,	205	The Repulse,	700
The Advantage,	205	The Garlande,	700
The Auftraic,	205	The Honor.	705
Tempore reginæ Elizabethæ. Otho, E.ix. circeiter 1558. An. 1.			
Eliz...			

V. The

VI. The last list I shall insert from Otho, E. ix. of the Navy of England is in point of date I conjecture about the fortieth year of queen Elizabeth, 1597, and I could not deny myself the pleasure of giving it to the reader, as it contains many curious particulars, with respect to the officers and men, not to be found in any preceding accounts.

The names of the Captains and Maistres, with the number of soldiers and mariners, which be appointed to be ----- Armee Roiall by the sea.

1. The Henry Imperiall—Portage 1000 tons—The Lord Ferrars Captain; men of his own retinue 400; John Towborowe Master; mariners 300, - Total men 701

2. The Trinity Soverayn—Portage 1000 tons—Courtney and Cornwall Captains; men of their own 200; of my Lord of Devon 200; John Clark Master; mariners 300, - - - - - 701

3. The Gabriell—Portage 800—Sir William Trevanion Captain; men of his own 100; the Bishop of Exeter 100; my Lord of Arundel 100; the Lord Sturton 50; John Rutte Master; mariners 250, - 601

4. Katterine Fortileza — Portage 700 — *** Flemynge Captain; of his own retinue 50; my Lord of Arundel

Arundel 100; of the Lord of Ormond 50; Sir William
William Scotte 50; Henry Wedale 25; Sir Amys Pollett
25; Ffreymay Master; mariners 250, - - 551

5. The Maryrose—Portage 600—Sir Edward Hawarde
Captain of his own 200; Thomas Spett Master; ma-
riners 200, - - - 401

6. (Ship's name burned) — Portage 200—Master
Arthur Archers of his own retinue 50; Sir William
Mewis 25; Master; mariners 80, - - 155

7. Shippe of Bristowe—Portage 160—Antony Peynter
Captain of his own retinue 100; Fuller Master; ma-
riners 60, - - - 160

8. The Lizard—Portage 120—Rygynall Captayn;
men of his own retinue 60; Master; mariners 40, - 101

9. (Ship's name burnt)—Portage 450—Sir Welton
Brown Captain of his own retinue 150; John Clegge
Master; mariners 150, - - - 301

10. The Nicolas Reed—Portage 400—Sir William
Porton Captain; men of his own and my Lord of Oxford
150; Master; mariners 150, - - 301

11. The Baptift Hopton—Portage 400—Sir Thomas
Wyndham Captain; men of his own 100; my Lord of
Oxford 50; Master; mariners 150, - - 301

12. -----ermyner—Portage 100—Ichingham Captain
of his own retinue 10; Sir Robert Lovell 10; Sir Tho-
mas Lovell 40; Master; mariners 40, - 101
13. The Sabyne—Portage 120—Sabyne Captayne;
men of his own retinue 60; Master; mariners 40, - 101
14. The Jenet—Portage 70—Gourney Captain of Sir
Edward Howard's retinue 30; Freeman Master; ma-
riners 30, - - - - 61
15. The Swallow—Portage 80—* * Kerby Captain;
Thomas Lucas 20; Sir Robert Clive 20; Gidart Master;
mariners 30, - - - - 71
16. Swipeftake—Portage 80—* * Cork Captain; Sir
Edmund de Lacy 20; Sir James Holand 20; Master;
mariners 30, - - - - 71

Victuallers for faid fhips.

Shippes.	Portage.	Mens.
1. -----olas Drapor, victualler to the Trinite Soverain, — — — —	140	40
2. Barbara of Greenwich, victr. to Gabriell Royal	150	40
3. Henry of Hampton, victr. to Mary and John,	140	40
4. Elizabeth of Newcastle to Katherine Forteleza,	120	40
5. The Dragon to the Peter, — —	120	30
Shippes.		

	Shippes.		Portage.	Men.
6.	The Lion to the Baptift Hepton,	— —	120	— 40
7.	Ship's name burned, vict. Nicholas Reed,	—	140	— 00
8.	The Peter of Fowey, vict. to gr. Backe and Gormyn,	— — —	120	— 39
9.	Margaret of Topham, to Mary, George and Gennett,	— — —	120	— 30
10.	Baptift of Calais, vict. to the Criste and leffe Backe,	— —	120	— 40
11.	The * * of Hull, vict. to the Mary Tamyfe and Lizard,	— — —	100	— 30
12.	The Barbara, Ifham vict. to Nicholas of Hamton and Swallow,	— —	100	— 30
13.	The Baptift of Harwich, to the Sabyne and Sweepstake,	— — —	80	— 30

Of the methods resorted to in those times to increase the number of the ships in time of war, or particular emergency.

The naval armaments of the two years above specified, namely, anno 4. H. 5. and anno 20. H. 6. did not probably exceed the usual naval establishments for eight months in every year in times of peace. But in time of war, or other public emergency, the king, with the advice and assent of parliament, or of a grand council, or often in lesser emergency

with the advice of his council or ministers only, had and exercised the power as the occasion required, of augmenting his navy and increasing the number of ships to any number or amount the particular service and occasion required; whether it was to fight the enemy at sea, or invade his dominions, to transport his troops or to convoy the princes of the blood royal, any great Lords, embassadors, &c. to or from any foreign country; or for any other particular purpose or occasion. And this was done either by proclamation of naval array sent down either to the Cinque Ports, who by their charters were obliged, as will be seen hereafter, to furnish a certain number of ships and men whenever called upon by the king for that purpose; or else by sending down the like writs of array, either generally, to all the sea-ports and towns upon the sea-coasts throughout the whole of the northern and western division of the admiralty; or else partially, to any particular district or part of either division, ad libitum; according to the emergency of the occasion and number of ships wanted, who also with the Cinque Ports (and that not only the inhabitants of the said ports and towns, but all the landholders too within six miles of the sea all round the English coast) were by their charters, tenures, franchises and exemptions from the land array and other burdens of the inland counties; were, as I said before,

before, obliged when called upon to furnish not only a certain number of ships, according to their several quotas, equipped, victualled and manned complete with failors, to rendezvous at the port and day named by the king, and from the day of their junction to be taken into the king's pay. And besides this these last were farther obliged, under the same tenures and exemptions, to keep up at all times both of peace and war a certain number of men as a guard called le Petite Watch to attend the sea-coasts.

A third method of encreasing the navy when probably the other two were found inadequate to the pressing exigencies of the service and occasion, was sometimes resorted to and practised in those days to the great grievance and injury of the merchants and owners of ships; and was the ground of incessant remonstrances from them and from the Commons of England to the king in parliament. And this was the king and council issuing writs of *imprest* under the great or privy seal, addressed to the admirals, sheriffs, mayors, bailiffs, to the masters, mariners, &c. of particular districts or ports empowering certain persons therein named to arrest or detain the whole or particular ships only, as it might happen within those districts or ports, with all their crews; and to keep them there for months perhaps at the importable charge of the merchants
and

and owners; of the mens pay, the damage of the cargo and ships furniture, before they were received or admitted into the immediate service and pay of the king.

Rot. 14. E. 3. prs. 3. m. 46. A proclamation, dated August 3d at Berkamsted, to the sheriffs, mayors, bailiffs, &c. to arrest, man and victual ships in Portsmouth harbour, and all the other ports and towns upon the coasts westward; to transport Thomas Ferrars, knight, with his armed force going to the relief of the islands of Gernesey, Jersey, Serk, and Dureney, at that time in danger from the enemy's fleet of galleys and ships of war. Harl. Manusc. 4583. p. 432.

Anno 14. E. 3. m. 30. No. 78. Order to Robert de Morley, knight, admiral of the north, to get ready fifteen ships to carry over Thomas Beauchamp Earl of Warwick and John de Veer Earl of Oxford from the port of Orwell. Idem ibid.

But before I proceed to particulars, I will just observe, that when proclamations had issued for arresting victuallers and manning any considerable naval armament, it was usual at the same time to issue out writs to the sheriffs of the several counties where the impressed ships lay, to take care that they were fitted and supplied with certain kinds of stores that probably
 merchant

merchant ships generally were not furnished with, as may appear from Rot. anno 14. E. 3. m. 29.

Rex Vicecomiti Essex, &c.

Cum assignavimus diversos fideles nostros ad arrestandum omnes naves triginta dolia et ultra portantes, in singulis portibus et locis in comitatibus Essexiæ, Suffolciæ, Norfolciæ, Lincolnæ, et Eboræ, pro passagio nostro, et quam plurimorum magnatum et aliorum in comitativa nostra in partes transmarinas profecturo.

Tibi præcipibus firmiter injungentes; quod tot pontes et claias, dolia vacua, bordas, rattas, cordas, stapulas, cannava-cia, annulos, et clavos ferreos, et alia necessaria pro hujusmodi eskippamento equorum necnon marenariorum; et buscas pro claiis, pontibus, bordis, rattis, provideri facias, capi e duci ad portum de Orwell &c. Harl. Manusc. 4583. p. 281. There are similar writs at the same time addressed to the sheriffs of Suffolk, Kent, and Suffex, mentioned in the same manuscript.

The indenture made the year before between the king and council and Thomas Ferrars, knight, for the defence and reparation of the fortifications of Jersey castle is very curious and worthy of insertion.

Anno

Anno 13. Ed. 3. m. 32. Item, fait a remembre que Mon-
 fieur Thomas de Ferrars ad empris d'envoyer saunz delay un
 homme suffisant au chastel de Gerneseye pur surseer les defautes et
 l'etat de meisme la chastel; pur pleinement certifier ent au con-
 seil, et en moen temps de trover gages a ceux qui y demurer-
 ront en garnison illceques, tant que la some de cent livres,
 et le dit Monsieur Thomas ferroit pourvoir tote manere de
 morte garniture pur le dit chastel, desore selon ce qui est re-
 quis per les messages du dit chastel. Et l'Ercevesque Canter-
 burie et le tresorer sont accordez, coment gree ferra fait a dit
 Monsieur Thomas trente tonneaulx de *Pomadre*, cinquante
 quintals de fer, deux quintals d'acier, pur la meisme garni-
 ture; et pur ceo que Guillaum Pein un des juretz de l'isle de
 Gerneseye est alors contre defens a les enemys; soit brief mande
 as bailiff et jurez de meisme l'isle de eslire un autre suffisant en
 son lieu, et de seiser ses terres biens et chateaux en le main le
 roi a respondre ent les issues. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 58.

From the context I apprehend the word *Pomadre* above re-
 cited means gunpowder. The dictionaries I have been able to
 consult give me no light. I find indeed the word *Pommade*
 signifies, besides *Pomatum*, the trick of a Vaulter, but no-
 thing more; nor do I recollect to have ever met with this
 word as spelt here *Pomadre*, but once in the Norman French
 manuscripts,

manuscripts, and that was Rot. Parl. anno 14. E. 3. m. 39. reciting letters of pardon to several persons for arrearages of debt due to the king; where I find one granted to Thomas de Brockhull pur trente et deux tonneaulx de pomadre, des queux il est charge de son account, du temps que il estoit assigne de faire divers purveyances ad opus le roi en conte de Kent. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 12.

Upon the whole, however, I am much inclined to believe that gunpowder was about that time invented and in use in the defence of castles, but not on board ships or in the field.

In the Harleian Manuscript, 5166, which purports to be a full and minute account of the revenues and expenditures of the whole royal establishment of this kingdom, during the reigns of the kings Edward the First, Second and Third; the following is the abstract of the fixed ordinary expenditure of the ordonance office in the Tower.

The Master of the Ordonance,	-	£. 151	11	8
The Lieutenant of the Ordonance, 100 marks				
per annum,	-	-	-	
The Surveyor,	-	-	36	0 0
The Clerks fee,	-	-	12	13 4
And the room of a gentleman, at 12d per				
day,	-	-	18	5 0
	T			The

The Yeoman, 9l. 2s. 6d. and room as before,	£.18	5	0
The Master Gunner, 12d per day,	-	18	5 0
The Gonestone Maker, 6d per day,	-	9	2 6
<i>Saltpeter Maker,</i>	-	9	2 6
<i>Gonne-founders two,</i> fee to each, 4d per day,			
and room of gentleman,	-	18	5 0
<i>Gonnesmith,</i>	-	9	2 6
Engineer Artificer, 4d a day,	-	6	0 xx ⁴
Master Carpenter, fee 8d a day,	-	12	3 4
<i>Gunners</i> 109, 20 at 12d a day,	-	273	15 0
———— 12 at 8d a day,	-	166	0 0
———— 80 at 6d a day,	-	730	0 0
———— 2 at 4d a day,	-	12	3 4

In the Index Literarum Patentium regis Edwardi 3ti Harl. Manusc. 5163, anno xvi. Ed. 3. 1333. prs. 1. There is the following entry of the title of an order for taking up or impressing certain ships for the purpose of transporting certain great ordonance of the king's from Sandwich to the Tower of London; the words are de capiendo certas naves ad ducendum magnum ingenium regis a villa Sandwici usque Turrim. Londini. Harl. Manusc. 5163, ad annum.

In Rymer's collections, vol. 7, p. 77. Ascough's catalogue, No. 4586, there is a similar patent, dated anno 17. E. 3.

1334, July the fifth de Petris ducentis sculptis pro ingeniis regis in quarrena de Folkeston asportandis a Sandwico ad Turrim Londini, from which and many other instances that occur afterwards, it appears that in the infancy of the great ordinance establishment they used stone balls for loading their cannon. In further illustration and proof of the meaning and construction of the above letters patent, I will subjoin another patent from Rymer's printed collection, vol. 7. p. 187, wherein the king Richard the Second, in the first year of his reign, commissions Thomas Norwich ad emendum et providendum, per supervisum Thomæ Restwold, de London, duo magna et dua minora ingenia (vocata cannon) sexcentas petras pro eisdem ingeniis, et pro aliis ingeniis; 12 balistas. quatuor millia quarrellorum, centum arcus, trecentas garbias sagittarum, sex millia bordarum de wainscot, tres mille libras ferri, centum garbas aceris, et triginta millia clavorum magnorum et parvorum, trecentas libras de saltpetre, centum libras sulphuris vini, unum dolium carbonum de salugh, sex secares, duas sawes, sex naugers, 12 pickoys, centum balcones, duo millia de stockfish et dolia et barellas pro præmissis imponendis, pro stauro et munitione castri nostri de Brest*. Teste apud Westm. 16 March. Rymer, vol. 7. p. 187.

* Surrendered by the Duke of Brittany, durante bello Gallico, as by articles stipulated and recited in the same volume.

There is in the great Rolls of Parliament, anno 27. H. 6. 1448. m. 17. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 162, a curious paper which in one part of it strongly confirms the probability of great ordinance or cannon being, at that time used in some parts, in defence of forts and castles; and in another, it strengthens an opinion or idea at least, I am strongly impressed with, that in that age, not merely Normandy, but France, Guienne, Aquitaine, Hanault, Flanders, and probably most of the estates of Europe enjoyed with England all nearly the same general outline of constitution, laws, government, and parliaments, consisting of their respective heads, the Lords or patrician estate Spiritual and Temporal, and a delegated representative of the people. The reader, I am confident, will not be displeased if I give the whole of this masterly composition, as it is perhaps one of the finest specimens of the old English language of that remote age now extant.

It is the report of the Duke of Somerset, the king's regent in France, of the state of his dominions there, entitled,

M. 17. Credence by my Lord of Somerset, Lieutenant of France and Normandy, committed to the Lord Hastings, Chancellor of France, and the Abbot of Gloucester, opened by the mouth of the said Abbot of Gloucester, in the parliament by the king's commandment, both to the Lords and to the Commons.

It

It is not unknown to your great discretions, how it liked our fovereign Lord not long agoe to commit the governance of the conuntry now being under his obeifance in his realm of France and Dutchy of Normandy, to the high and mighty Prince my Lord of Somerfet. The which prince in his notable wisdom seeing by experience the great continual and daily dangers, that there be done by the adversaries ; seeing also the very likelihood within short time of intollerable hurt thereof, unless then convenable and speedful remedy be prudently purveyed here : sent hither my Lord Hastings Chancellor of France, and me in his company, with Letters of Credence to our fovereign Lord ; to let his Highness have knowledge of the doubtfull and dangerous disposition of that country : the which credence as compendiously as I can I shall open to your wisdoms.

Our Credence containeth principally three things. The first is, to shew the great puissance, and long advised ordinance furnished with all manner of habilliments of war of the adverse party ; the which daily fortifie, repair and stuff all their garrisons within the frontiers of the king's obeifance ; going and riding within the said obeifance, armed in great numbers against the tenor of the truce ; doing murders innumerable, taking the king's subjects prisoners, as it were pleyn warre ;

warre ; with other great and lamentable injuries, as open robberies, oppressions and pillages without number. Of the which offences they have been divers times summoned, and required by my said Lord of Somerset to make cease, and repair them after the tenor of the truce : but neither remedy ne reasonable answer, may in any wise as yet be had. Wherefore it may be presupposed by their froward deeds, and contrarious disposition, that their intention is not to proceed effectual to any good conclusion of peace.

Also the king's uncle hath commanded and made crie throughout all his obeisance ; that all nobles prepare them to be ready horsed and armed, in all wise habilled as belongeth to men of arms, within fifteen days warning ; upon pain of forfeiture of all their livelihood the number of which men is great and inestimable. Also the king's uncle hath commanded to be cryed in every parish of his obeisance under the same pain of forfeiture, that every thirty men furnish a man horsed and armed in briganders and legerneffe with a long bow or a cross bow ; and charged expressly that they doe none other labour but exercise them to their said bows and harnies ; the number of which men so habilled and arrayed, as it is said by credible persons, that of reason should thereof have very knowledge, exceedeth forty thousand men. This is the first part of our credence.

2. The

2. The second part of our Credence is to shew that, (if the war should fall, as God defend,) the county of Normandy is in no wise of itself sufficient to make resistance against the great puissance of the said adversarie for many great considerations. First, for there is no place in the king's obeisance there purveyed, neither in reparations, ordinance, ne in any manner artillery; but well nigh all places be in such ruin, that though they were stuffed with men and ordonance, they be so ruinous, that they be unable to be defended and kept. The which reparations and ordonance to be purveyed sufficiently will draw to inestimable costs. Also, by the last grant of the aid in Normandy it was openly proposed by three estates there, that the general poverty of the country was so great, that it was impossible for them to bear any more hereafter such charges as they have borne heretofore; wherefore they desired to have the number of men of war made less, or else to shew to the king's highness, that there might be had goods of England to bear the same charges. For of necessity they said, they must be spared for certain years of such payments, or else they must be needly constrained to goe their way and forsake their country, and suffer the land to be abandoned to the adversaries, the which God ever defend. This is the second part of our Credence.

3. The

3. The third part is to remember, that the final term of the last truce approacheth fast. For as your wisdoms have well in mind, it shall last now not to four months. And therefore it is thought high time to begin your purveyance, for the safeguard of that noble land. Wherefore my Lord of Somerset most humbly beseecheth the king's highness, tenderly prayeth all my Lords his counsellors, wisheth, willeth all your wisdoms, to have that noble land in your good and special remembrance, calling to mind the great, inestimable and well nigh infinite costs and effusions both of goods and blood, that this land hath born and suffered for that land's sake. Whereof the shamefull loss (the which God ever defend) shall not only be the irreparable hurt of the common profit, but also an everlasting spite and perpetual derogation in the fame and renown of this noble realme. In eschewing whereof, and also least his silence in that behalf might in any wise be laid to his charge hereafter; my said Lord of Somerset for his true acquittal, gave us in commandment to open his Credence on this behalf to the king's highness, or to such as it pleased his grace to command to hear us.

Wherefore, as by his commandment ye have benignly heard us, as we have in the name of my Lord of Somerset in the most humble wise besought the king's highness, and hereby
 prayed

prayed all my Lords in this parliament assembled; in like wise tenderly we desire all your wisdoms that now represent all the Commons of this land; that it like you to weigh well all the considerations of this Credence in your great discretions; and so help to pursue such aid, remedy and brief expedition, as the merits of this matter requireth. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 163.

In order to do but common justice to the above recited very curious and valuable state paper, I must beg leave to illustrate by adducing an additional authority or two in proof of both the conjectures I ventured to hazard in the preceding page; namely, that in that age there were estates or parliaments held in Normandy and in France, at least in a similar mode to those held here in England, and that cannon were in some parts at that time in use in the defence of fortresses and castles.

The first is from the Acta Concilii, anno 9. Hen. 6. 1430., from the Cottonian Manuscript, Titus, c. 5. ad annum, entitled, Articles in general that my Lords appointed to goe into France desire to be instructed of; with their answers.

Article the fifth. For the payment of the states of the parliament, of the chamber of the accounts, and of other

U

officers,

officers of the realm of France, considering that of that land ariseth no commodity to pay them with.

Answer. That many and divers causes and considerations suffer not the payment remembered in the said article to be made at the charge of this land; but that they must be made of goods, such as may be gotten there by means ordinary or extraordinary; as fine of pardon or other such, as the king's council there can best find or advise. Modifying alway the number of the persons and estates of the parliament, and chamber of accounts, and of other officers, as the necessity and service of the king and his obeissance for the time asketh and requireth.

Article 10. Item, considering that the nature of the last peace will, that no party shall *inire tractatus pacis sine consensu communi statuum universorum regni*; and that the estates of France will not condescend to no treaty of truce, but only to treaty of peace: What shall be done in this case? Cottonian Manusc. Titus, c. 5. ad annum.

Rot. Parl. anno 9. H. 6. m. 18. Item, forasmuch as in the treaty of peace made not long agoe betwixt the king of noble memory Henry the Fifth, late our soverain Lord, and his father Charles of France, it is contained; that none of the parties enter into or make any treaty of peace or of accord, with

Charles

Charles the Dauphin, without the assent of the three estates of both realms, that is to say of England and of France; and it is held for certain, &c. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 78.

With regard to the second point, the use of great ordinance and artillery in the defence of castles and fortresses, it is clearly ascertained by the indentures made between the king Henry the Sixth, in the fourteenth year of his reign, anno Domini 1435, and the Duke of Gloucester; constituting the latter for nine years Governour of Calais and the Marches, the Tower of Ryfbark, and of the castles of Hammes, Marke, Vie, Stangate and Bavelingham, together with the castle and lordship of Guisnes, in the marches of Picardie: the said Duke always to keep up in the time of peace for the guard and safety of Calais 260 gens d'armes, and 200 archers; and to take for his Lieutenant two shillings, his Marshal one shilling, and for each gent d'armes on horseback, eight pence, and for each archer six pence per diem, over and above the hommes d'armes and the archers of the retinue of the treasurer of Calais; and to himself 104l. 14s. 8d. per annum, and forty belashers, twenty carpenters, fifteen masons, besides artillery men and officers, and cannon and powder sufficient for the guard of the same at the king's cost.

For the castle of Hammes twelve men at arms, thirty

archers, eight horse, remainder foot, with the same appointments.

For the castle of Mark four men at arms and sixteen archers, the men at arms and archers horse, at nine pence and foot six pence per day.

For the castle of Vye, four men at arms and twenty archers.

For the castle of Stangate, six men at arms and four ballashers, foot.

For the castle of Bavelingham, thirteen men at arms, twelve ballashers, and fourteen archers.

For the castle at Guisnes, fifty men at arms, five archers, all foot, except his Lieutenant, who shall be horsed.

And over and above of special reward for himself and his several Lieutenants forty marks per quarter. Cotton. Manuscript, Cleopatra, F. 4. ad annum.

By the following Acts of Council, dated March 5, and April 16, anno 8. H. 6. 1430, it appears John Hampton, Master of the Ordinance was commissioned to goe over into France, to survey the state of the ordinance at Harfleur and Calais; with full powers to take away from or add thereto in each place respectively at his discretion, as he should find most conducive to his Majesty's service, and the defence and security of his fortresses there.

Anno

Anno 8. H. 6. March 8. Ordered a warrant, &c. to pay to John Hampton, Master of the Ordinance to our Lord the King, for his trouble and expences which he will have to sustain, as well in this kingdom as in France, one hundred marks by way of reward.

April 16. Ordered a warrant under the Privy Seal, addressed to William Minos, Governor of the town of Harfleur, or his Lieutenant, to deliver up by indenture to John Hampton, Master of the Ordinance to the king, or to his deputy, the guns, great and small, lapides bombardarum, the sulphur, saltpetre, gunpowder, malleos plumbeos, cum pancis, vargis, scholielis, pickorfes, ballett ; launces, gables, magnas hawfers, et alias cordas principales ac artillarias, and all other offensive or defensive instruments, necessary for the wars of our Lord the King, remaining and being in his custody within the town of Harfleur : taking all care however that there be left in reserve there, a competent, reasonable and sufficient supply, for the safeguard of the town aforesaid.

Item, a similar warrant to Richard Bokeland, Treasurer of Calais, to deliver up to the aforesaid John Hampton, the guns great and small, &c. as before in Calais ; reserving a full sufficiency for the defence and safeguard of the town.

Item, that a warrant, &c. be made out under the Privy Seal
to

to the Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Exchequer, to pay to the aforesaid John Hampton the sum of 2212l. 17s. 4d. for the ordinance provided, and to be provided for the king's use in the Marches. Vide Cleopatra, F. 4. ad an. & datam.

Acta concilia, anno 12. H. 6. 1434. May 12, in the hall of the Bishop of Durham's palace near London; it was agreed that there should be applied for the safe custody and defence of the king's castle of Roxborough fifty pounds, for the purchase of artillery, cannon, powder and other necessities of war; and fifty pounds for the reparation of the castle aforesaid. Vide Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam ejusdem anni.

Before I conclude this digression, which however I hope has apologized for its length by the entertainment it has afforded the reader; I will beg leave to add one authority more from the Acts of Council of this year, in farther illustration of the point we are now treating of, from the articles of the indenture settled between the Council of Regency and the Earl of Salisbury, for the safeguard and ward of the east and west marches towards Scotland. And although the general tenure of it refers rather to the military department; yet as it is one of the completest of the kind I have met with, and contains many curious particulars, I think it preferable to give the whole entire here, rather than to divide or repeat any part
of

of it a second time ; especially as I have other indentures or appointments or engagements to the Wardenship of the east and west marches towards Scotland to adduce, when I come to treat particularly of indentures in general in the next volume.

Anno 12. Hen. 6. July the 6th, at Westminster, ordered indentures to be executed between his Majesty, (on the one part,) and Richard Earl of Salisbury, (on the other part,) for the safe and sure custody of the castle and city of Carlisle, and the west marches towards Scotland, for one year, from the twelfth of September next. The said Earl to receive from the king in gross for the aforesaid service at the rate of 2500l. in time of war, and 1250l. in time of truce or peace.

At the same time other indentures ordered to be executed between his Majesty and the aforesaid Earl of Salisbury, for the safe and sure custody of the castle and town of Berwick, and of the east marches towards Scotland, for one year, from the twenty fifth of July next ; the said Earl to receive from the king for that service 5000l. in time of war, and 2500l. in time of truce or peace.

The same day were read and agreed to the following articles, with the answers to the same ; the which were ordered to the keeper of the Privy Seal, to make out thereupon the necessary patents in form.

The

The desires of the Earl of Salisbury to have granted of the king our Sovereign Lord, by the advice of his council, if he shall take upon him the keeping of the town and castle of Berwick and of the east marches with the west marches; the indenture of keeping of which west marches last made between our sovereign Lord and the said Earl, expireth the 17th day of September next coming.

First, that our said sovereign Lord afore the feast of St. John the Baptist next coming, doe make the castle and town of Berwick to be sufficiently stuffed for the defence of them with bows, arrows, guns, gunpowder, spears, arbalastes, and other habiliments of war.

2. Item, that the indenture of the said keeping of the east marches be made after the effect of the tenor of the cedula annexed to the articles that remain in the filaze in the office of the privy seal.

3. Item, that the said Earl have in hand upon his sealing of the said indenture, one thousand pounds in part of paiment for the said keeping of the east marches, for waging of soldiers there, and for purveyance of victual, and other stuff necessary for the said castle.

4. Item, that the said Earl be paid or sufficiently assigned afore his said sealing, of the fums due for the keeping of the castle and town of Carlisle and west marches.

5. Item,

5. Item, that the said Earl may have upon every taille, that shall be reared upon any of the customs that now be or that hereafter shall be, for the keeping of the said castles, towns, and marches, or any of them; *writts de solvendo et habere facias*, directed to the said customers for payment to be made to the said Earl upon any such taille.

6. Item, that the said Earl have his bill granted touching his costages and expences made for meeting at two times lately with the Earl of Douglass and other commissioners of the king of Scotts upon reparation of attemptates done upon the said west marches; and also for keeping certain hostages of the said king of Scotland.

7. Item, that ordinance be made for reparation of the castle of Berwick where it needeth.

8. Item, that ordinance be made for the amendment and reparation of the walls, dyches, barriers, grates, (greces) gates and herte of the said town of Berwick ruinous and defective, and not defensible; as it sheweth more plainly in the bill late given to our sovereign Lord aforesaid, by his burghers of the said town.

Memorandum for commissions to be made to the Earl of Salisbury of both wardenrys.

First, for commissions of conservation upon both the marches.

2. Item, for commissions to grant safe conduct upon both marches while he shall be warden of them.

3. Item, a privy seal to the Earl of Northumberland, to deliver to the Earl of Sarum all the books of the Warden Courts and of the marches, concerning the east marches.

4. Item, for a writt or a privy seal to deliver to him the stuff of Berwick.

5. Item, for a commission for ships and victuals to be taken for stuff of the castle and town of Berwick, during the time that he be Warden there.

6. Item, for the entrechange of the king of Scotland's hostages, and their names to be closed in the king's letters of privy seal or writ, if such entrechange shall be had.

7. Item, for a power under the king's great seal to grant safe conducts to certain Scotts, entending towards Jerusalem and Babil; if they shall have such license.

8. Item, for a commission to take particular trieux (inquests) if need be upon both the marches.

Answers to the above.

First, as to the first article concerning artillery and stuff, &c. it shall be delivered at the king's costs, as the article purporteth;

porteth; except bows and arrows if he any take, which shall be abated upon his wages. And the king shall doe make reasonable reparation upon the castle of Berwick, between this and the feast of St. Martinmas coming.

2. As to the second article, collation shall be made between the indentures.

3. As to the third article, he shall have in clooth 500 marks, and in money in hand one hundred pounds, and an hundred pounds of the rate of the lands of my Lady of York, if it draw to so much; and if the said rate come not to an hundred pounds, yet he shall have the rate what it shall be. And over that the Treasurer of England shall pay him in money to make the sum of 100l. And if it happen the said rate to exceed the sum of one hundred pounds, yet he shall have the sum exceeding a hundred pounds. And over that he shall have in money paid him afore the first week after the feast of St. Michael next coming, of and to the sum of seven hundred marks with the said rate exceeding the sum of one hundred pounds.

4. As to assignement for the west marches, he shall be assigned upon the ports or otherwise, as it can be accorded between the Treasurer of England and him.

6. Item, as to costs for entendance two days of meeting

the commissarys of the party of Scotland, he shall have for both the days four hundred marks ; and over that he shall have two hundred marks for keeping of the king of Scotland's hostages as his bill purporteth.

7. He shall have for the castle of Berwyk eight guns small, twelve culvers, twenty-four albalastes (cross bows), forty-eight pounds of thredde for strings, and twelve cates with quarrelles.

8. Proviso that if for lack of artillery and reparation to be purveyed for the castle of Berwick, betwixt this and Martinmas next coming any inconvenient ensue that the captain be discharged of his bond.

Item, it is accorded that if the said Earl, for any causes hereafter moving him, upon warning to be made to the king and his council of a quarter of a year before the expiring of the indentures of the keeping of the castle and town of Berwick, and of the east marches of England, to be made between the king and him ; woll leave the said keeping, and no more entremise therewith, after the said expiring ; that then after the said (warning) expiring, it shall be lawfull to him to leave the said keeping, and that he be not chargeable toward the king ne his heirs of the same keeping, but thereof fully discharged and acquitted for ever.

8. Item, it is accorded that he shall be and stand in like manner discharged and excused for the keeping of the castle
and

and town of Carlisle, and of the west marches towards Scotland, after the expiration of the indentures to be made betwixt the king and him for the keeping of the same.

9. Item, that the privy seal at the request of the said Earl make letters under the king's privy seal to the Chancellor of England to make the said Earl to have the articles aforesaid exemplified under the king's great seal. And then follows the patent at length, dated July 6, anno 12. H. 6. Vide Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam anni ejusdem.

I shall conclude this digression with reciting an order of council, anno 10. H. 6. 1432, dated Westminster, August the 7th, for the purveyance of an inferior or lesser kind of ordinance or artillery, on which however rested the principal if not sole dependance of our infantry equally in the field and in the navy.

Affented to and agreed by the Lords of the Council to pass a warrant to the Treasurer and Chamberleyns of the Exchequer, that they do in all goodly haste and order and provide, at the king's expence, one thousand bows, two thousand quivers of arrows, and sixty gross of bow strings, to be delivered by indenture to Steven Flexmore, to bring and convey them safely at the king's charge to the Duke of Bedford, the king's uncle, in his kingdom of France for the defence of the same. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad annum. Of

Of the Cinque Ports.

The Cinque Ports were an incorporated body enjoying an inferior jurisdiction within themselves, subordinate to the admiralty of England, but more immediately united in the same person, and under the immediate command of the Constable of Dover Castle. From their local situation opposite, and their immediate vicinity to Calais and the French coast; they were from the highest antiquity of great consideration and consequence for the defence of the British channel, and of the southern and eastern coasts of this kingdom. And under this idea were invested with high honours, privileges, powers and immunities, and erected into a bulwark and guard to defend our coasts, able to repel the attacks of any foreign enemy, whenever they might attempt an invasion. This is beautifully expressed and illustrated in the demands of the Commons, anno 13. Ed. 3. 1338. Rot. Parliam. m. 11.

Endroit de garde sur mere, prie la commune, que ils ne soyent chargez a conseil donner as choses, des queux ils n'ount pas conifance: et avis est a la dite commune; que pur ceo que les barouns des (Cinque) Ports qui a tout temps ount honours devant les commons de la terre, et sount si enfranchiz pur estre garde et muir entre nous et aliens, si cas avenist que ils vouldroient notre terre entrer et assailir, que ils ne sount

con-

contributours a nuls aids ne charges toucheantz la dite terre ; ainfi pernont profitz sanz nombre fourdanz par mere et terre, par la garde susditz : par quoy avis est a la commune que ils devercient faire la garde sur la mere aussi comme la commune fait sur terre sanz gages prendre ou demander, ensemblement od autres grandes villes et havennes que ount navie, que sount en le cas et tenuz a ceo faire. Harl. Manusc. N^o. 14. p. 48.

The Cinque Ports in this reign were properly nine, namely, Dover, Hastings, Roventdale, Sandwich, Feversham, Hethe Pevensey, Winchelsea, and Rye *; as appears from the proclamation, anno 19 E. 3. Rot. Franciæ. m. 31.

The Barons of the Cinque Ports, as appears from their petition, anno xxii. Ed. 3. (Harl Manusc. 252. p. 15, were by their charter obliged to find the king fifty-seven ships, so often as he shall summon them and his other Barons to go with him to his wars.

From an ancient manuscript in the British Museum I have extracted too the following particulars. Harl. Manusc. 7376.

These are the services which the Barons of the Cinque Ports

* But originally as it appears from a very ancient extract of king Henry the Second's reign, the Cinque Ports were only five in number, namely, Hastings, Ravenhill, Hethe, Dover, and Sandwich. Vide Fautina, c. ix. towards the latter end of that manuscript.

owe to our Lord the King yearly on the seas if there be occasion.

The town of Hastings, three messes.

La Lower de Pevenessy, one mess.

Bolewafheth et Petite Iltaine, one mess.

Kekisbourne in Kent, one mess.

Crenahe in Kent, deux hommos avec deux anquins avec les messes de Hastings.

The town of Rye, five messes.

The port of Dover, nineteen messes.

The town of Winchelsea, ten messes.

Lyde, seven messes.

La Port Romenale in Romnah, four messes.

La Port de Hethe, five messes.

Folkestone, one mess.

The town of Feversham, one mess.

The Port of Sandwych, Stonore, Serdwich, Sale and Senes, five messes.

That is to say, whenever the king shall wish to have the aforefaid messes in his service, they shall have forty days summons, and shall find for the king twenty men and a Master, in every mess, and the sailors of every mess armed and well furnished to perform their service to the king. These messes shall

shall be paid at the charge of the Cinque Ports, from which they are furnished respectively. And when these messes after their coming have served five days, at the proper charge of the Cinque Ports, after the said five days, they shall continue to serve at the charge of the king, as long as wanted; that is to say, the master of each mess shall receive six pence a day, and the mariners three pence.

The Court de Gripeney shall have four days summons and be held for the Cinque Ports or either of them, that is to say, to try pur faux juggement, pur service le roi soustrait, pur tre-for trove, pur fauxer de monoy, pur treson purpose contre le roi et sa pees troubler. Harl. Manusc. No. 7376.

The whole of this armament, or of the full quotas of the ports of the northern and western coasts were very seldom called out altogether, except in cases of the greatest emergency like that we are proceeding to give an account of. When king Edward the Third raised a large fleet in his expedition against France, in the thirteenth year of his reign 1338; he took out only twenty-one ships from the Cinque Ports, nine from the river Thames, and only seventy ships from the western division, a proportion far short of what each contributed to the armament of 1345 against Normandy, as appears from the rolls of that year. Harl. Manusc. p. 54.

Y

But

But besides these more extensive demands upon the Warden of the Cinque Ports for numerous fleets for the purpose of war, transporting of soldiers, &c. even in times of peace it was usual whenever government had occasion for a few ships only for the purpose of convoying any princes of the blood royal, great lords, embassadors; or even for the conveyance of merchandize, stores, or other freight, to send down a summons to the Warden to provide the ships wanted for that particular occasion.

Anno 2. H. 4. The queen Isabella of England, eldest daughter of Charles king of France, who had been married to king Richard the Second, in 1396, after his deposition (herself at that time no more than twelve years of age) was to be restored and conducted back to her father, the king of France. There is in the Acts of Council (Cottonian manuscript, Cleopatra, c. 3.) a very pleasing, curious and particular account of her Majesty's establishment and the whole arrangement previous to this *Voiage Royal*, as fixed by the Lords of the Council. And the twenty-third article of it is in purport as follows: Item, to send letters of Privy Seal to the Warden of the Cinque Ports, to make provision of three barges and three balingers, armed with the necessary equipments, safely to convey her Majesty's person in her passage by sea.

Answer.

Answer. If it shall please our most redoubted soverain Lord the King.

And in the Ordinances for her Majesty's passage, Art. 9. Item, to provide as well for all of the officers, &c. going out in her Majesty's suit, as likewise for the return of the Ladies and others of her Household, when her court shall be discharged.

See also an order to the Cinque Ports to provide ships, dated July 5, anno 17. Ed. 3. de tercentum petris sculptis pro ingeniis regis in quarrena de Folkestone asportandis a Sandwico ad Turrim Londini. Aysc. Manusc. 4586. p. 77.

I shall conclude upon this head with the original proclamation and summons to the Cinque Ports, to furnish their full quota of ships and mariners for this particular service, anno 20. Ed. 3, dated at Westminster, March 14, and addressed to the nine Cinque Ports, Dover, Hastings, Roven-dale, Sandwich, Feversham, Hethe, Pevensey, Wynchelsea, and Rye.

Mandamus quod totum servitium navium quod nobis debetis, habeatis apud Sandwicum, die lunæ proxime post festum Ascensionis Domini proxime futuri ad ultimum, promptum et paratum ac bene munitum, ad proficiscendum exinde in obsequium nostrum prout vobis in parte nostra tunc plenius in-

jungatur ; ficut nos et honorem nostrum, ac commodum, ac falvationem populi, regni, terrarum et locorum prædictorum dilligitis, nullatē tenus omittatis.

Teste rege, &c. Aysc. Manusc. 4584.—Rymer's Collections, vol. 5. p. 360.

With respect to the farther extension of the naval array beyond the limits of the Cinque Ports, when necessary for the public service, it was made as before by writs of proclamation and summons issued and addressed (under the immediate sanction of an ordinance of the parliament, or order of the King and Council only as the emergency of the occasion might happen to require;) either to the several ports and Wardens of the sea-coasts of the whole or of any particular districts of the western or northern division of the admiralty ; to array, victual and man a specific quota of ships of a given number of tons burthen and upwards, to rendezvous and assemble at a particular port named, by a certain day appointed without fail ; and from that day of junction to be taken under the immediate pay of the king. Whether it was precisely fixed and ascertained by ancient law or custom then what precise number of ships or men any particular sea-port or town were obliged to furnish, I am not warranted to say upon any definite ground of authority from the records. But

I rather

I rather conjecture the contrary, and that the quota was ad libitum, according to their respective flourishing situation and ability, and generally too fixed and ascertained previously by mutual offer and acceptance between them and government.

In the report made by the council to the House of Parliament, &c. 13. Ed. 3. It is said expressly, fait a remembrer que les mariners sur leur departir promistrent de faire appareiller leur niefs entre cy et de my Quaresme prochain avenir; et conseil leur ferra venir une somme de deniers, en aide de paier leurs coustages qui ils ferront et sustendront en cela partie. Et fait assaver, que les gentz de cynque portes promistrent de trouver le moite des dites coustages de leur propre, et le conseil leur ferra avoir paiement de l'autre moite, mas noun pas en noun des Gages, einz de grace especial; et trouveront les dits gentz des portes xxj niefs de la propre et del jx niefs del cawe de Thames, Harl. Manusc. 14. p. 54.

Item, fait assaver que les mariners devers le west out promis de trouver 70 niefs de la charge de cent tonneaulx et passant, et de les appareiller countre mesme jour, et de prendre eux-mesmes si pres come ils purront de trouver les coustages que y busoignera mettre, et pur le remanent le conseil leur envorra une somme des deniers, en l'eide de tieux costages faire; mes noun pas en nomme des gages, einz de grace æspecialz :

et

et ferra un clerc ordinez de surveer les costages fufdits pur ou la plus grant bufoigne ferra pur les mariners devers le west ; et un autre pur les gentz de cynk portz.

Et fait a remembrer, que totes les niefs de Portsmouth et de ilceques devers le west de la charge de cent tonneaulx et passant, fableront a Dertemouth le dit jour, et ferra assigne lour admiral le Counte d'Arundel. Et les niefs de cynk ports, et del eawe de Thamysse de meisme la charge, fableront a Wynchelsea, et ferront lour admiral le Counte de Huntindon ; et accorde est, que tote cestes niefs ferront prestes a my Quarresme prochain avenir.

Item, que mandez soit totes ports as admirals, que ils facent arrester totes les autres niefs qui purront passer a meer ; que ils ne aillent par sur la meer par doubte des ennemies ; et de garni ceux a qui les niefs fount, que ils amenant ou facent amencer, les ditez petites niefs as Havens et lieux ou eles purront mieltz estre salvetz des ennemys. Rot Parl. anno 13. E. 3. Harl Manusc. No. 14. p. 55.

And this leads me to speak of the third method of increasing the navy by impress, that is, by the king and council issuing writs under the great seal to certain serjeants at arms, the Mayors, Bailiffs, &c. of the ports, either in general, or of any particular districts, to arrest the merchants ships and their crews at sea or in port, and to detain them

them for the king's service, to the number and size wanted. A practice as irregular in itself as it was grievous and burthen-some to the trading part of the nation, and seldom, I believe, resorted to but except either when there was a deficiency of ships still wanting to be supplied, after the two former modes of summons to the Cinque and other ports had been put into execution ; or else where the exigency of the emergent occasion was so pressing as not to admit the tedious form and delay of a six weeks previous summons to the Cinque or other ports in the regular mode of proceeding.

Anno 12. Ri. 2di. an Order of Council, dated August 11, 1688, to Thomas Sayrill, Serjeant at Arms, to impress six ships and one barge, properly fitted out and equipped, in the port of Dartmouth, to conduct John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, from Bourdeaux to England, *ad consulendum regem tam de bono regimine status ejusdem, quam certis aliis magnis et urgentibus causis.* Vide Rymer's *Fædera*, vol. 7. pages 641. and 648.

Anno 16. E. 3. m. 47. Feb. 20. Edwardus Dei Gratia, &c.

Universis et singulis admirallis, vicecomitibus, Majoribus, Ballivis, Ministris, Magistris, et marinariis navium, et alijs fidelibus suis, &c.

Sciatis

Sciatis quod nos de fidelitate et circumspectione provida dilectorum nobis Johannis de Watenhall; Johannis de Gernacle et Henrici de Baa, servientium nostrorum ad arma plenius confidentes assignavimus ipsos conjunctim et divisim; ad omnes naves quadraginta dolia et ultra portantes usque ad numerum sexaginta navium in singulis portibus et locis maritimis in comitatibus Cornubiæ, Devonix, Somerset, Dorset, et Southampton, tam infra libertates quam extra; arrestandum et ad easdem naves marenariis et aliis hominibus pro gubernatione earundem necessariis muniri, et usque portum de Portsmouth duci faciendum. Ita quod sint ibidem de Dominica in medio quadragesimæ proxime futuræ promptæ et paratæ pro passagio quorundam magnatum et aliorum fidelium nostrorum ad partes Britannix pro urgentissimis negotiis nos et jura nostra specialiter tangentibus, mittendorum. Dantes eisdem Johanni Johanni et Henrico, et eorum cuilibet, plenam tenore præsentium potentiam, capiendi et arrestandi omnes illos quos in præmissis contrarios vel rebelles invenerint, et prisonis nostris commitendi ibidem moraturis quousque de eis aliter duxerimus demandandum. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod eisdem Johanni Johanni et Henrico vel eorum alicui, in præmissis omnibus et singulis faciendis et exequendis, intendentes sitis consulentes et auxiliantes, quoties et prout iidem Jo. Jo. et Hen.

vel

vel eorum aliquis vobis et alicui vestrum scire fecerint vel fecerit ex parte nostra : et vos præfati vicecomites omnes illos quos iidem Jo. Jo. & Hen. vel eorum aliquis in præmissis contrarios vel rebelles vobis vel alicui vestrum liberaverint vel liberaverint ; ab eis et eorum quolibet recipiatis et in prisonis nostris salvo custodiri faciatis in forma supra dicta.

In cujus rei testimonium has literas nostras fieri fecimus patentes. Teste me ipso apud Westmonasterium viceffimo die Februarii, anno regni nostri Angliæ, sexto decimo regni vero nostri Franciæ tertio. Per ipsum regem. Harl. Manusc. 4584. Rymer's Coll. No. 5. p. 351.

However, be that as it may, this mode was at several years in this and the succeeding reigns, down to Edward the Fourth, carried to such lengths, as to be made the ground of very serious complaint and remonstrance, not only by the merchants, but by the Commons in parliament, in their petitions to the king in very many instances ; who in the forty-sixth year of this reign goe so far as to state this single circumstance as the principal cause of the then comparative annihilation and destruction of the navy, meaning there the commercial trade of England by sea. These reiterated complaints might, and probably did, obtain rather a partial temporary suspension or remission of the irregular exercise of this power, than any

Z

effectual

effectual remedy or prevention of the evil ; except that in the third year of king Richard the Second's reign the Commons obtained the passing of a statute, that the owners or masters of all the ships taken by the king, should be allowed a certain rate for the tonnage of their vessels during their continuance in the king's service, as appears by the following extracts from Harl. Manusc. No. 21.

Anno 47. Ed. 3. m. 28. That the Masters of ships may be paid the wages of them and their mariners, from the day they were appointed to serve the king.

Answer. Taking of ships shall not be but for necessity, and payment shall be reasonable as heretofore, m. 29.

Those Masters of ships require allowance for the tackling of their ships, now in the king's service.

Answer. Such allowance hath not been heretofore made. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 81.

Anno 2. R. 2. m. 4. The Commons of the county of Cornwall shew how by taking up of their mariners the Spaniards lately burned all their ships, and otherwise much en-dammaged them; the like complaint made all the sea-coasts, and therefore pray remedy to be had.

Answer. The king, by advice of his Council, will provide remedy therefore. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 125.

Anno

Anno 2. R. 2. Petition of the Commons, m. 67.

That some remedy may be found against the taking of fundry mens ships, whereby they have been spoiled to the utter decay of the whole navy.

Answer. The king will therefore make the best provision that he may. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 126. and again, in the second parliament of that year, m. 52.

That the owners of ships, impressed for the king's service, for their losses in the same may be considered, and that mariners may have like wages as archers have.

Answer. It shall be as hath been used.

Anno Richard the Second, m. 47.

It is enacted, for to endure unto the next parliament, that every Master of a ship shall have for his reward for every ton weight of such his vessel as shall be taken up to serve the king, for every quarter of a year that they shall so remain in the king's service, three shillings and four pence; beginning the first day of their entering into the haven or other place appointed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 131.

As to the mode of conducting these imprests or taking up of the merchants ships in the ports, there is in the Acta Consilii, anno 21, H. 6. A. D. 1443. Cot. MSS. Cleopatra, c. 5. a curious paper very difficult to make out and very defective, be-

ing merely a rough sketch or minutes of the resolutions taken on different council days, on the question of providing ships for the service of Bourdeaux and Baion, by way of memorandum taken by the keeper of the Privy Seal or Clerk of the Council as an instruction to himself to prepare the necessary instruments against a future meeting. Defective as it is, however, I will venture to present it to the reader, as it gives, in my opinion, a much more minute and particular account of the mode and manner of conducting this business of naval impress, than I have yet been able to meet with.

I. The first is March the 6th, present in Ardern's house at Westminster, my Lords the Chancellor, the Bishop of St. David's, Earl of Suffolk, and the Treasurer of England.

Art. 3d. Also be there made commissions by all the coasts of the sea to put them in array. Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 61.

II. March the 7th, in the Star Chamber at Westminster, present my Lords the Cardinal of York, the Chancellor, the Bishop of St. David's, Northumberland, Suffolk, Treasurer, and Chamberlain.

Art. 1. Memorandum, that Coldey, Darlyng, Whiklyn, and Bowman shall go arrest ships, and none desireth but they doe duly that, that belongeth in such case, and thereto they beeth sworn on a book.

Tulmer

Tulmer and Wiklesee shall arrest ships in the port of London, with the help of the Mayor, Sheriffs, River Admiral, and Water-Bailiffs.

Darlyng and Bowman, from Maldon, Essex, Suffolk; Norfolk, Lincoln, York, and Newcastle; with the help of the Mayor, Vice-Admirals, and customers of the place they shall come in.

Coldey and Ingoldeby from London to Hamton, with the help as above.

5. Alsoe be there a commission for arresting ships in Bristowe, and that all the ships be ready at the Caumbre on St. George's day next ensuing.

6. The Recorder of London desireth to ----- in indenting the people to the king's aid.

Art. 7. Be it commanded to goe to the Mayor and desire him to labour by all the means that he can, to do that the king desired.

Art. 9. Be there made letters under Privy Seal to all the king's feed men, and also to the king's * great council to be with the king and his great council at Westminster, at the

* N. B. There was no parliament summoned or held from the 20th to the 23d year of this reign.

Quindean of the Pascha all excusations ceasing for the good weal of the king, his realms, lordships and subjects.

Anno 10. Be there made a commission to Wicklesce, &c. as above for the arresting of ships with an inhibition in the same, that the admirals, nor any for them, disarrest them. Cleopatra, c. 4. p. 62.

III. Acta Concilii, anno 21. R. 2. March the 9th, at the Star-Chamber, Westminster, present my Lords the Cardinal of York, the Chancellor, the Bishop of St. David's, Earl of Suffolk, and the Treasurer.

Arresting Shipping.

As to the first (question), treat them as well as you can, inducing them to awe the rest, and finding surety to be here again to doe their devoir, and be in the caumbre by St. George's day ; to find surety and if they will not doe it, to suffer them then to depart.

To the second question put them under arrest, and do all that ye can for to do the king's service ; and in no case prest them, but if they can find security.

To the third, necessity is such that of what portage they be they must be had, the enough that they be of three hundred (tons) or above.

To the fourth, that they and the custumers together take such
surety

furety of the owners and the Masters of the ships inhabiting the town, that they shall come to the place appointed thereto if wind and weather permit, by St. George's day, or else in no wise to suffer them to depart.

To the fifth, to treat them as honestly as that they may, and there be none other cause but that, spare it not.

To the sixth, they must leave four (passengers) and two frayrds at least on this side.

To the seventh, they shall have such power as they desire by the * * *.

Be there made letters to the Treasurer and Chamberlain, **** to make (provision) therefore for ships such as shall serve now to do the king's service for the warre. Cleopatra, c. 4. p. 62.

IV. Council, March the 11th, Star-Chamber, Westminster, present the Chancellor, Treasurer, Bishop of St. David's, and the Wardrobe.

Be there made Letters of Commission under the Great Seal unto Sir H. Stafford, Lieutenant of Calais, to the Marechal and Mayor of Calais, and to the Warden and Bailiffs of Calais, jointly and severally commanding them and every of them, to put under arrest all ships that are at Calais, that beeth in serving, or shall be under order, for finding fix vessels; and to keep them under arrest unto the time that the owners or Masters

sters shall find sufficient surety that, for the setting over the sea the armee, the said six ships shall be ready in the Cambre by St. George's day next ensueing, ready with the ships for the setting over the said armee. Cleopatra, c. 4. p. 64.

But to return to a period much nearer to the times I am writing of, there is in the forty-sixth year of Edward the Third, 1371, a petition of the Commons in Parliament so illustrative of the grievance complained of in Henry the Sixth's reign, and which at the same time gives so pleasing a picture of the flourishing state and prosperity of the English navy and commerce only twenty years before, that I cannot deny myself the pleasure of inserting it.

Rot. Parl. anno 46. E. 3. m. 20. Item, prie la commune, que come les merchantz et mariners d'Angleterre qui xx annez passez toutdys a devant ; la navie du dit roiaulme estoit en toutz portz e bonnes villes sur meer et sur rivieres, si noble et si plenteouse, que tous lez pais tenoient et appelloient notre avauntedit seigneur *le roi de la meer*, et lui et tout son pais do-toient le pluis par mer et par terre, per cause de la dite navie. Et ore, il est si desincresce et aneantis, par diverses causes ; apoy il y a demeure suffisiente a defendre la dite pays (si grand mestier estoit) encontre royal poair, y fuisse a grant perille communement de tout le roiaulme. Des queux causes sarroit
trop

trop long de tous escrire. Mez un cause est principale la
longe arreste que souvent ad este faite, sur le niefs en temps
de guerre. Cest assaver par un quartier de an ou pluis, avant
que ils passent hors de leurs portez, sanz riens prendre par leur
gages de leur mariners durant cel temps ; ou le seigneurs des
niefs rien prendre de guerdon, pur les appareillements des
leurs niefs et coustages. Dount ils priount en oeuvre de cha-
rité de convenable remedie.

Reponse. Il plect au roi, que la navie soit maintenue et garde a greindre ease et profit que faire se poet. Harl. Manusc. No. 15. p. 384.

I shall only adduce one instance more of impress, and that is a general arrest or embargo of all the shipping and mariners in the several ports, sometimes resorted to in the commencement of a war, on the alledged ground of precaution, and by way of prevention of their being captured by the enemy, for the general safety and security of the ships, their cargoes and the owners. And this was practised in the year of king Edward the Third, the thirteenth 1339, as appears from Rot. Parl. 13. E. 3. m. 14.

Item, per le mischief que est venu a la navie d'Angleterre,
per la reson que les seigneurs de auscunes niefs et maistres et
mariners des mesmes les niefs, ount envoiez ou menez lour
A a nief

niefs sur meer, hors de la flote et compagnie des autres niefs; pur querir merchandizes et pur covetise de gaigner : queles niefs ount etez pris per les ennemies notre seigneur le roi sur meer, et les gents trovez en ycelles tuez et mourdre en esclander notre seigneur le roy et de tout son royaume, et en aneantissement de la flote de sa navie; si est accorde et assentu en plein parlement, que tote la navie demoeerge et soit arrestuz tanque autrement ent soit ordenez. Rot. Parl. anno 13. E. 3. m. 15. Harl Manusc. No. 14. p. 49.

There is in Otho, E. ix. a similar arrest or embargo laid upon all the ships and mariners of England, dated June the 9th, in the nineteenth year of queen Elizabeth, which as far as remains legible from the depredation of the fire, is as follows.

 ----- service and benefit of the -----
 ----- ties name straitly charge and command you -----
 -----majesties ports under your office and charge that no shippe-----
 -----appertaining to her Majesties subjects nor any maryner of-----
 -----navye her Majesties subject, be suffered to pass over the seas
 into ----- countreys for any cause; but that there be a
 general restraint made ----- all persons and vessels of that
 sorte;

forte; saving such as shall goe a fything, or shall passe from porte to porte along the coasts of this realme, or be notoriously known to be passengers or victuallers of the realme of Ireland; until you shall receive further directions on that behalf from her Majestie or from us to the contrary; and of this you may not fail in any wise as ye tender the furtherance of her Highness's service and will answer, the contrarie at your perills. From Greenwich the 9th of June 1574. Otho, E. ix. Anno 19. Eliz.

It was observed before that all the ships raised at the requisition of the Crown, whether by the Cinque Ports or the other ports were by the old tenure and custom to be raised and sent forth equipped, manned with mariners and victualled at the expence of the ports that supplied them, until their junction with the admiral at the port of general rendezvous, at the time appointed; and then they were taken into the king's immediate pay. For although in the armament of the 13th of Edward the Third, the Crown consented previously to be at half the first expence of raising them with the Cinque Ports, and to advance the remanent proportion thereafter to be ascertained, in aid to the western ports; yet there is an express salvo in both cases, that such aid should be considered, *mes noun pas en nomme de gages, einz de grace especiall.*

This charge the sea-ports and towns upon the coasts raised by assessments amongst themselves, after the rate probably of their assessments to the Tenth when such were payable under the inspection and direction of the commissioners of naval array, or the Wardens of the sea coasts, and the holders of the lands within six miles of the sea were assessed too after the rate of the assessments to the land array in the 19th of Ed. 3d, which, as will be seen hereafter, was æquivalent to a whole fifteenth. For, besides these casual imposts in times of war chiefly, upon the sea-ports, towns, and holders of land for six miles inward all round the coasts of England; they had a constant standing charge upon them unremittingly even in the time of peace, namely, that of keeping up a constant guard called *petti wacchee* to defend the coasts by land or sea from the attacks or descents of foreign ennemys. And in consequence of their being liable to the duties abovementioned, they enjoyed with other privileges, a total exemption from the charges in the military array for finding men at arms, hobelairs, and archers in common with the holders of the inland parts of the counties. The following authorities may serve to prove and illustrate the above particulars.

Pat. claus. 13. E. 3. m. 4. D. 1. Rex dilectis et fidelibus suis Johanni de Hanlo et sociis suis custodibus terræ maritimæ in Com. Buck. Salutem. Quum delectus et fidelis noster Rogerus
Hil-

Hillary unus justiciariorum nostrorum de banco, ad arma juxta status sui exigentiam se paravit, ad equitandum personaliter una cum aliis justiciariis et fidelibus nostris in comitativa delecti et fidelis nostri Edwardi Ducis Cornubiæ et comitis Cestriæ filii nostri carissimi; contra alienigenos hostes nostros pro defensione regni nostri, si eidem hostes nos invadere præsumerint. Nos volentes ipsum Rogerum eâ occasione de hominibus ad arma seu aliis pro custodia terræ maritimæ alibi inveniendis exonerari; Vobis mandamus quod ipsum Rogerum ad aliquem hominem ad arma, seu alium pro custodia dictæ terræ maritimæ, ratione duarum partium manerii de Haversham in comitatu prædicto in manu sua existentium inveniendum, non ullatenus compellatis, et districtionem si quam ei, eâ occasione fieri feceritis, sine delatione relaxari faciatis eidem. Teste custode, &c. apud Berkamsted, April 28. Aysc. Manusc. 4584. Rymer's Coll. vol. 4. p. 2.

And from the following instrument it appears, likewise, that part of Oxfordshire, as well as Buckinghamshire, was liable to be assessed to naval array. Anno 13. E. 3. m. 46. Item, est accordez & assentuz que briefs soient faits, as arraiours des gens d'armes, hobelours et archiers, pur la garde de meer en counte d'Oxford, par la priour et chanoyns de Burencester; de surseer que la demande que il fount as dits priour et chanoins, pur trover un
homme

homme d'armes et deux archiers, pur faire tiel garde a Portsmouth; et aussint de paiment faire de deniers pur celle cause tantque ils aient autre mandement de roi, pur la reson que il est avis aux prelatz et autres grands en dit parlement, que totes les possessions de leur maison purront a pain suffire a leur sustentance, et que ils ne purront trover tiele charge sanz trop grand oppression de eux, et de leur maison. Idem ibidem, p. 61.

Rot. Parl. 13. E. 3. The Commons in parliament state their following resolution. Et quant a la sauve garde des arenage sur la meer, *par terre soit le garde fait per avisement des chivalers des countes, ou des ditz gardeins soient assignez en la plus sauve maniere que homme poet, sanz (dammage) de la commune.* Et que gentz de la terre de quele condition que ils soient, et ont les terres en les countees sur la meer; que ils facent leur demeure sur mesmes celes terres, pur plus pleinement raboter les ennemies de la terre: issint que pur leur demeure ilceques soient dechargez per ailleurs de aide faire a la dite garde. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 48.

Petition X. of the Commons, anno 20. E. 3. m. 20.

Item, que la garde de la meer se face desore en avant totes parts (soit) as costages nostre seigneur le roi come avant adeste promys, et la poeple de ceo desore en avant deschargez.

Reponse.

Reponse. Quant au garde de la meer, soit la garde fait come adeste faite : avant ces heures et semble que meilleure garde ne poet estre fait que le roy ne fait quant il demeure par de la sur la guerre et pour defense de celle terre. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 170.

Rot. Parl. 20. E. 3. Membrane 14. Third Petition of the Commons.

Item, sur ceo que en le dit arraie grantez fust que tous ceux qui furent resceantz deinz six lieux de la meer feussent deschargez et quittez du dite arraie, par les grandes coustages ad queux faire ils feurent chargez de jour et de nuyt a tout lour poair, par les chiefs gardiens pur la garde de la mere ; quelles charges ils ount, soeffertz puis encea et encore fount..

Et ore de nouvel brief est issue as viscounts des diverses countes, de lever de eux divers fines pur le dit arraie : et issint ferroient ils deux foitz chargez grievousement contre reson ; pour quoy prient la dite commune que supersedeas general soit grantez, a chescun Viscount qui ad les dits fyns a lever ; de surceafer de tout sans plus charger le dit poeple de deux charges precedents.

Reponse. Quant a cette point le roy voet que ceux qui ount terres deinz six lieux de la mere, et fount garde sur la meer pur mesmes les terres, soient dechargez de trover autres
gentz

gentz d'armes, hobelours et archiers pur la service le roy, selon ce que estoit autrefoitz accorde ; et si nul soit empesche countre la fourme de celle accord, veigne en la chancellerie, et il en avera son remedie, et soit brief de supersedeas omnino. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 168.

Rot. Parl. anno 46. E. 3. 1372. m. 44.

Item, prie la comaine que come de chescun hundred des countees sur le mere sount trovez sur le garde de meer par ennemys aliens certains gentz, que est appelle pettiwacche a grant empoverissement des countees susdites, et les queux gentz ne sount ilceques autre bien que si noun de garnir le pais, de la venu des ennemys, la quelle puiſt aussi bien estre fait par meindre nombre des gens ; que pleise abreger et descharger chescun hundred de la moitié des gentz susditz.

Reponse. Les gardiens sur les costers de la mere per avis des seigneurs et autres du pais, facent mettre tiel nombre, come luy semblera que doit suffire de reson. Harl. Manusc. No. 15. p. 331.

The general maintenance of the navy of England, after the fleets or ships supplied and set forth in either of the modes above specified, had joined the royal flag, and were admitted
into

into the king's immediate pay ; was provided after the 20th of Ed. 3. (at first, by an ordinance of council only,) by the grants of certain customs, and dutys upon imports and exports specifically and expressly assigned for that purpose ; or as it is termed in those several grants for the keeping of the sea. The duty of two shillings per ton upon all wines imported, as likewise the duty of one shilling in the pound upon all merchandize imported or exported ; were in the course of a few years adopted by parliament, and from that time, I believe generally, if not always expressly assigned and appropriated to this service. And at the same time too a second additional charge of two shillings per sack of wool to the malatout of 6s. 8d. and the great subsidy of forty shillings per sack was laid, and in like manner assigned and appropriated to the service of paying the ships, guarding the coasts, and convoying the trade. And sometimes (in farther aid where necessary) a certain proportion of the fifteenth, tenth, &c. was also expressly assigned and appropriated to the same service.

An. 21. E. 3. m. 11. 1347. Petition of the Commons, the 6th.

Item, monstre la commune, que come au conseil tenuz par votre cher filz Lionel de Andwert adonques gardien de la terre, l' an de votre regne ventisme primer, s'estoit assis sanz assent de votre commune sur chescun sak de leyn passant le mer deux

B b

souldz,

souldz, sur chescun tonnel de vyn, deux souldz, ed un sur chescun livre de avoires exportez ou reportez en la terre, pur gages des niefs de guerre salvantz la dite terre pur ennemys, et conduantz les dites marchandises; la quelle charge durant tanque le Seynt Michael prochain ensuant, la quelle charge des leynes uncore court en demande dez grauntz et communes de la terre.

Que pleise a votre seigneurie la dite charge ouster, et commander voz lettres as collectionours de la dite charge, de la demande cesser.

Reponse. Toutes les charges supposez par cet article, sount oustez sauvez les deux souldz du sak, que est a durer tanque a la Pasche prochain avenir; et pur ceo que cestes charges furent ordeinez, pur sauvement conduire les marchandises apportez en roiaulme, et de illeques menez, as parties de outre meer. Sur quel conduite grands mises sount faits par le roi, que avant le terme de Seynt Michael ne purroient estre levez tout au plein; il semble que pur si petit temps avenir, la dit lever ne deveroit estre tenue trop chargeante ou trop grievouse. Car le passage des leynes per cause dez quelle l'eide fust grantez, a durer tanque le Seint Michael, fust per certain cause au plus grande partie delayez, si que en eide des coustages avant mises fust levez, et pur ce soit le term prolongez. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 181. Anno

Anno 7. R. 2. m. 14. The Earl of Northumberland, admiral of the north, promifeth for himfelf; and the Earl of Devon, admiral of the weft, promifeth for himfelf; fully to keep the feas, fo far as the charge granted by the Commons therefore would ferve, namely, fix pence in the pound on merchandize, and two fhillings per ton on wine. Harl. Manufc. No. 21. p. 152.

Anno 11. R. 2. 1386. m. 18. The Lords and Commons grant to the king one half tenth and one half fifteenth; and, for defence of the fea, of every ton of wine coming or going out of the realm three fhillings, and one fhilling of every pound of merchandize, except of ftaple ware, and the fubfidy of woolls and ftaple wares. They alfo granted for one year one other half fifteenth upon certain conditions, to wit, that if certain Bifhops, Lords, and others there named, appointed to be Commiffioners for the redrefs of enormities, doe eafe the king by their inventions, by other profits; that then their latter grant to ftay: upon condition alfo, that thofe perfons there named to be of the king's continual council, fhall not be removed ne have their commiffions repealed; and that the fame their grant and commiffion be exemplified under the Great Seal to every fhire freely.

Anno 31. H. 6. 1452. Parliament granted, for the king's

life, three shillings per ton on wine imported by denizons, and six shillings by aliens ; and one shilling in the pound on merchandize imported or exported by denifons, and two shillings by aliens ; to be applied to the keeping of the sea and defence of the realm and no otherwise ; and moreover 2l. 3s. 4d. of denifons on every sack of wooll and five pounds on every last of hides, and 5l. 6s. 8d. of every merchant alien, for the defence abovesaid ; providing moreover that 13s. 4d. shall be applied to the wages and pay of the town and garrison of Calais (upon every sack) and a farther sum allotted for maintaining and defending Rysbank and the Jetty there. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 244.

In the Rolls of the second Parliament, anno 2. R. 2. m. 37. there is an establishment for the defence of the northern coasts provided for by a new mode of imprest.

Rot. Parl. anno 2. R. 2. 1378. m. 37, 38. That the king will appoint certain vessels for the keeping of Scarborough, the men of which town within two years before paid 1000l. ranfome, and for the defence of the north sea coasts.

Answer. This matter is committed to the Earl of Northumberland, the Mayor of London, and to certain merchants of the north, by them to be considered.

The order of the said committee confirmed by parliament.

That

That those sea-coasts shall be defended with two ships, two barges, and two ballingers, armed and appointed for the warrs, at the charges hereafter ensueing; namely, that every ship, boat, or other vessel whatever, shall pay for every ton of her burthen six pence, passing those sea-coasts; except all vessels laden with wines or other merchandise from Flanders, to be discharged at London, and ships and other vessels laden with staple wares and to be discharged at Caley. The which excepted vessels shall not be safe conducted over by the admiral of the sea, without consideration. Certain named are appointed keepers of the sea-coasts, and to levy the subsidies afore said by sea and land. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 120.

With regard to the pay of the officers and mariners serving on board the king's fleet, we may observe that the principal officers, as the admiral of England (if existing sole at the time); and his Lieutenant, or else the admiral of the north and his lieutenant, the admiral of the south and his lieutenant only, had a stated and certain establishment or yearly salary; and besides, when in actual service on board, they with the captains and the under-captains and all knights, esquires, gentlemen, and archers serving on board, had a stated allowance by the day for dyet, varying according to their respective ranks and degrees, and apportioned to the same rate allowed to those several degrees, when serving by land.

In

In the Harl. Manusc. 5166. p. 8, which, as I before observed, gives a minute account of the whole establishment throughout every department of those early ages. The following extract contains the whole of what is said of the admiralty.

1. Lord Admiral fee 200 marks,
 Lieutenant fee 100 pounds; two clerks,
 one at one shilling, the second at 8d per day, £ 30 8 4
 Riding costs 10 shillings a day, when out,
 about, per annum, — — — 120 0 0
 Botchier, 10l. total, — — — 270 3 4
2. Treasurer fee 100 marks, and two clerks at
 8d. per day, — — — 24 6 9
 Botchier 8l. riding costs about 120l. Total 219 0 0
3. Controllers fee 50l. two clerks at 8d. — 24 6 8
 Botchier 8l. riding costs 4s. per day, about
 70l. — — — Total 152 6 8
4. Surveior, fee 10l. two clerks at 8d. 24l. 6s.
 8d. Botchier 8l. riding costs about 60l. Total 142 6 8
5. Clerk of the ships, fee 23l. 3s. 4d. Botchier,
 6l. riding costs 3s. 4d. a day, about 60l. Total 89 3 4
6. Clerk of the storehouse at Deptford Strant,

his

his fee 32l. 3s. 4d. and one clerk at 12d.

per day, 18l. 5s. — — Total 50 8 4

7. Vittler of the navys fee 50l. one clerk at 8d.

12l. 3s. 4d. riding costs at 5s. per day,

70l. — — — Total £ 132 4 4

Plate fee 20l. Harl. Manusc. 5166 p. 9.

In the Cottonian Manuscript, Cleopatra, F. 3. ad annum 4. Hen. 4. 1415. there is a particular minute account of the revenues and expenditures of this kingdom for one single year; from June the 24th 1414, to the same day in the year following; of which the following is the whole relating to the navy expenditure.

Art. 14. The keeping of the sea. To the admiral of our Lord the King, for the safe custody of the sea, for the wages of 50 men at arms, at 12 pence and 150 archers, at 6d. per day, from the 4th of June to All Saints Day, one quarter, 39 days, 812l. 10s.

To the same for the wages 4 Masters, for that time, at six pence per day, and 250 mariners, each at three pence per day, one quarter 39 days, 419l. 5s.

The which sums are assigned as above, in all, 1231l. 15s.

The which is the whole extra amount of the naval expenditure

penditure for this year. Cleopatra, F. 3. ad annum 4. H. 4.

In the Cottonian Manusc. Cleopatra, F. 4. the assignment for the naval armament, anno 8. H. 6. 1429, was as follows.

June 18. Ordered a warrant for the payment of 2100l. for the victualling a fleet sent out to sea from the western ports against the king's enemys, and for their pay and expences to Robert Burton, one of the clerks of the receipt of the king's Exchequer.

It appears before from the recital of the naval ordinance of the twentieth year of Henry the Sixth, A. D. 1441, that the whole amount of the naval expenditure of that year was 6890l. 13s. 8d.

In the sixteenth century, during the reigns of king Henry the Eighth, Edward the Sixth, king Philip and queen Mary, and queen Elizabeth, when the English navy was much increased in the size and number of its ships and officers, and their destination to serve in the winter months, as appears from the lists before recited, there are a variety of minute particular statements to be met with in the Manusc. Otho, E. ix. which I shall introduce occasionally to the reader in their several places, as curious and valuable pieces of information in themselves and especially as illustrative of the more defective accounts

accounts of the preceding reigns, and serving to point out the several gradations of improvement and amelioration of the naval establishment of this kingdom. And under the present head I will produce, first, an estimate of the charge of four ships at sea and ten in harbour, dated the 8th of April, anno 6. Ed. 6. 1551; and secondly its companion, the Surveyor of the Navy's return of the state of the several ships in harbour, dated May the 12th in the same year, with the answers to each article.

A note of the charge of the ships, dated the 8th of April, anno 6. E. 6. 1551. from Otho, E. ix.

The charge of four ships at sea, the *Haste*, *Newback*, *Gerfawcon*, and *Back of Bulloigne*. And ten ships in harbour; the great *Back*, *Pawncsey*, *Sweepstake*, *Antelope*, *Murrian*, *Magna Harbrough*, *Brawton*, *Momio*, *Seven Stars*, and the last made *pinnace*.

Charges of wages, &c. of Captains, Masters, mariners in divers ships of the king arrived in Ireland and in other ports.

For the dyet of 4 Captayns serving in the 4 ships by the space of 7 weeks, from the 1st March to the 18th day of this present month, April, at 42 shillings every each of them 14l. 14s. od. and more for wages of 480 soldiers, mariners and gunners

C c

serving

serving under them, for the same time 7 weeks, at 14 shillings every man, 336l. Summa 350l. 14s. od.

Wages in harbour.

Item, for wages of 1430 Masters, mariners and gunners serving under the king his Majesty in the same shippes by the space of five weeks, begun the 16th March last and to end the 19th of this present, at ten shillings every man, seven hundred and fifteen pounds. 715l.

Conduct money.

Item, for the conduct of 88 mariners and gunners to be discharged, over and besides 300 men appointed to serve in the Antelope and the Forbeon for Waiters, and 250 men appointed to serve in the shippes for transport of graine, at seven shillings and sixpence each man. Summa 330l. Total 1,395l. 15s. 4d. Otho, E. 9.

II. Reports James Dautre May 12th, 24 ships fit for service.

The Pawncey, Trinite, Salamander, Bull, Teiger, Willobie, Primrose, Antelope, Salke, Greyhound, Swallow, Jennett, Newbacke, the Fawcon, Sacar, Phenix, Jerfawcon, Swift, Sonne, Moone, Seven Stars, Flower de Luce.

Answer. To be so ordered by the King's Majesty.

Seven ships must be docked, viz. The Pettar, Mathers, Irus, Sweptak, the Magna Harbrough, Augellaunt, the Hynde.

Answer.

Answer. To be so ordered likewise.

Three ships, These all dry docked to be new made at your Lordships pleasure, the Lefs Backe, the Lyon, the Dragon.

Answer. To prepare timber ready for the same.

The Graund Master dry docked not thought worthy of new making to lye still or to take what is profitable of her for other ships.

Four ships thought mete to be sold. The Struro, Unicorne, Christopher, and the George.

Answer. The George to be kept, and the other three to be sold.

Six ships not worth the keeping. The Maidenhead, Jel-lour Flower, Port Cullis, the Rose Flower, Double Rose, and the Rose in the Sun.

Answer. To be served as they may with little charge. The Bark of Bulloigne in Ireland, whose state we know not.

Item, the two gallies and the brigandine must be newly repaired, if your Lordships pleasure be to have them kept.

Answer. To be so repaired and kept. Total forty-five to be kept. Otho, E. ix.

I shall conclude under this general head with giving the

Accountant General's statement of the navy receipts and disbursements for six years of queen Elizabeth's reign, in succession, from the thirty-second year, 1589.

	Disburfed.	Received.
Anno 32. Eliz. 1589	—£47,843 1 0—	£ - - - - -
Anno 33. — 1590—	60,373 19 2—	56,189 17 6
Anno 34. — 1591—	32,770 4 4—	38,691 18 3
Anno 35. — 1592—	31,575 10 7—	30,928 13 5
Anno 36. — 1593—	32,223 6 8—	26,148 9 3
Anno 37. — 1594—	48,380 7 0—	49,139 3 7
	£491,524 10 4 ^{ob. q.}	£492,134 19 1

Of which received out of the receipt of

the Exchequer, — — — £ 479,489 11 0
 Received upon sales, &c. — — — 12,645 8 1

And so the said Accountant appeareth to

be in debt in the sum of — — — £ 610 8 8

Signed, Howard, Lord Henry Seymour, Vice-admiral,
 anno 1588.

I will take the liberty of subjoining next a curious extract from Otho, E. ix. being the conclusion of the Treasurer's account of the English navy, dated July the 17th, in
 the

the thirty-first year of queen Elizabeth's reign, 1588, which I introduce here principally, as it seems to me to make the first approaches to that more improved and perfect mode of naval dispositions and arrangements gradually introduced from this period and still happily subsisting, in expressly naming several appointments and offices in the Navy, such as admirals in the modern acceptation of the word, vice-admirals, rear-admirals, corporals, ensignbearers and preachers; not any one of which titles do I recollect to have met with in any of the ancient manuscripts relating to the navy of a prior date.

Sum total of the payments and disbursements, and of the number of men contained in the Treasurer's account.

Men 11959—Admirals 8—Vice-admirals 3—Rear admirals 1—Captains 126—Masters 136—Lieutenants 26—Corporals 24—Ensignbearers, 2—Secretarys, 1—Preachers, 13—Soldiers, mariners and gunners, 11,623.

Sea wages,	—	—	—	£52,557	18	4
Conduct in discharge,	—	—	—	2,272	14	9
Tonnage,	—	—	—	6,225	0	0
Sea store,	—	—	—	343	0	4
Sea victuals, men 4900 the west parts to Dorrel,				6,717	18	0
Extraordinary allowance and rewards,	—			854	9	1
						Ex-

Provisions and exemptions extraordinary, with

a new supply, — — — £1,503 17 3

Dated July 17, 1588. Otho, E. ix.

And before I proceed I shall insert from Otho, E. ix. the following abstract of the number and degrees of the several marine officers, warrant officers, and servants in a ship of the complement of 250 mariners, in the time of queen Elizabeth's reign, with the respective pay of each by the month. For as I have not found in any earlier accounts hardly any of these appointments, except the Masters, Quarter-masters and mariners at all mentioned, or their respective situations and pay ascertained, although most of them must have always existed on board. It will be of great use to assist the reader in forming a somewhat more competent idea of the precise situation, duty, pay, and emoluments of these inferior officers; (so far I mean as such really existed in the navy, before and during the fourteenth century); by reducing these accounts to a relative proportion with those other particulars and accounts which have been happily handed down to us in those ancient manuscripts, defined and ascertained with equal accuracy and precision.

To Ships of 250 Men, per month.

A Master,	—	—	—	£ 3 0 0
				2 Mates,

2 Mates, each,	—	—	—	£ 1 5 0
A Pilot,	—	—	—	— 1 5 0
A Boatwain,	—	—	—	1 5 0
4 Quarter-masters, each,	—	—	—	0 17 6
4 Quarter-masters, each	—	—	—	0 13 9
Master carpenter,	—	—	—	1 5 0
His mate,	—	—	—	0 17 6
A purser,	—	—	—	0 16 8
A steward,	—	—	—	0 17 6
One mate,	—	—	—	0 13 9
A cook,	—	—	—	0 17 6
His mate,	—	—	—	0 13 9
A surgeon,	—	—	—	1 0 0
3 Trumpets, if an admiral 4, each,	—	—	—	1 0 0
A drummer or fife,	—	—	—	0 15 0
A Coxswain,	—	—	—	0 17 6
His mate	—	—	—	0 13 9
An armourer,	—	—	—	0 18 8
A gun-maker,	—	—	—	0 18 8
A master gunner,	—	—	—	0 15 0
His mates, per month, each,	—	—	—	0 11 3
4 Quarter gunners, each,	—	—	—	0 11 3
And 4 mates, each,	—	—	—	0 11 3
Yeoman of powder-room,	—	—	—	0 11 9

Every

	Per Month.	Week.	Day.
Every common man's wages,	£0 10 0—0 2 6 —0 0 4½		
A gromette's wages,	— . 0 7 6—0 1 10½—0 0 3½		
A boy's wages,	— . 0 5 0—0 1 3 —0 0 2½		

Otho, E. ix.

From the whole of the authorities above quoted we may observe in general, first, that the Lord Admiral of England, (or when this office was divided,) the admiral of the north and the admiral of the west, in those early ages during the fourteenth century, (before the extension of the British dominions, settlements, trade and commerce, rendered more extensive, appropriate, wiser and better regulations and provisions absolutely and indispensably necessary): superintended and managed as well all that complicated department of business; of regulation, provision, appointment and destination, now consigned to his Majesty's Commissioners of the Admiralty Board; as likewise the administration of these appointments, orders and powers, and the carrying them into ultimate effect and execution by commanding the fleets in person and fighting the enemy at sea.

With regard to the powers entrusted with the admiral of England, we have seen already what they were, anno 15. H. 3. 1231. by the Charter of Appointment of Peter de Rival
to

to this high office. Vide page 7. of this work. And likewise what they were, anno 41. Hen. 3. 1263, by the letters patent granted to Sir Thomas Moleton of this office, in that year. Vide page 9. I have not been fortunate enough hitherto to recover any patent of appointment to the office of admiral of England, during the fourteenth century; but I presume the powers were precisely the same with those entrusted jointly with the admirals of the north and west. Of the latter there are preserved in Rymer's Manuscript Collections two patents of appointment to the office of admiral of the north and of the west, of the twenty-fifth year of king Edward the Third, 1350, the first of William Bohun Earl of Northampton to the northern district, and the second of that great and illustrious prince Henry Duke of Lancaster, who, after having so eminently distinguished himself and acquired such accumulated glory and never-fading laurels by his victories and achievements, at the head of the English forces in Gascony, in the campaign of 1345, thought it no disparagement to accept the appointment of the command of the western district of the admiralty. The patent at length is as follows.

Rex universis et singulis majoribus, vicecomitibus, ballivis, Dominis, magistris, et marenariis navium; et aliis fidelibus suis tam infra libertates quam extra. Salutem.

D d

Sciatis

Sciatis quod nos de fidelitate et circumspectione provida dilecti consanguinei nostri Henrici ducis Lancastriæ plenius confidentes, constituimus ipsum capitaneum et admirallum flotæ nostræ navium ab ore aquæ Thamisiæ versus partes occidentales. Dantes et concedentes eidem duci plenam tenore præsentium potestatem castigandi et puniendi, tam in terra quam in mari, omnes et singulos de flota prædicta criminales et delinquentes, et eidem duci in executione officii admiralli rebelantes seu contrariantes; et plenam justiciam de iis juxta eorum demerita faciendi; ac omnia alia et singula quæ ad officium admiralli pertinent faciendi et exequendi prout ipsi duci melius et utilius videbitur expedire. Nec non ad capiendum per se et deputatos suos, tot homines marenarios quot pro regimine navium flotæ prædictæ sufficere poterunt, quoties opus fuerit, in quibuscunque locis et portibus maris infra admiralatum prædictum, ubi iidem homines marenarii poterunt inveniri. Et ideo vobis omnibus et singulis mandamus (quod in præmissis) faciendis et exequendis intendentes sitis, respondentes, consulentes et auxiliantes; quoties et prout prædictus dux vel dicti deputati sui vobis scieri fecerit vel fecerint ex parte nostra.

In cujus rei testimonium, &c. Teste rege apud Westmonasterium, octavo die Maii, anno 25. regni, &c.

Eodem modo constituitur Willielmus de Bohun, comes Northampton,

hamton, admirallus flotæ navium ab ore aquæ Thamysæ versus partes boreales.

Teste ut supra, &c. per ipsum regem. Ayscough's Catal. 4586. p. 515.

In farther illustration of the powers, &c. granted to the admiral of England I shall subjoin, from Otho, E. ix. the purport of the indenture made between king Henry the Eighth, in the fourth year of his reign, 1512, and Sir Henry Howard, Knt. constituted High Admiral of England in that year. See appointment 110.

A patent made out to Sir Henry Howard, March 15, anno 4. H. 8. Herein the king retains him to be his admiral, chief and general captain of his army, then appointed to be set out, his Majesty covenants that the admiral shall have under him in the service 10032 men, accounting himself for one, besides them that furnish the British ships, of which 52 to be captains, 5471 soldiers, 50 Masters, 4015 mariners, 440 gunners. The admyral bindeth himself to do such service on the sea as the king's commission shall enjoyn and lymitt him during the king's pleasure. The admiral to have for his wages, dyet and rewards xs. per day. The captains * * *

* * * * *

here are three lines destroyed by the fire.—The king promiset

to victual them by a time agreed upon, the victualler to deliver the victuals by indenture to the captains to be distributed to the king's best profit and advantage, without waste * * * * *. The admiral shall have the pay with a month's advancement by the hands of Sir Thomas Wyndham, Treasurer for the wars for that service, and so from month to month, &c.

Then follows some limitations with regard to the dead shares, viz. in the Trinity Sovereign of 1000 tons; 38 dead shares, accounting the dead shares of two pilots in the same, and for the reward of forty gunners in that ship, the master-gunner five shares a month, his mate and four quarter-masters 2s. 6d. each, and the remaining thirty-four ordinary gunners 1s. 8d. each per month, over and above five shillings the ordinary wages per month; the next ship of that burthen to have but twenty-seven dead mens shares, with tonnage for the ships hired, after twelve pence per month for every ton, and their tons declared in the indenture. The admiral hath allowance of conduct of a halfpenny a mile for every man after twelve miles a day, of which day's journey credence hath been given them by their oaths thereupon, made before John Daunce. In regard that the king victuals the armee, the admiral is to answer each half of all manner of gains that he or his retinue shall

shall gain by land or water, all prisoners, being christians, or ships, being two hundred tons, furnished and rigged, and all artillery in any other ship taken. Then follows the list of the king's shippes in the Thames, anno 9. H. 8. Otho, E. ix.

I shall next subjoin a miscellaneous selection of some of the more remarkable patents and commissions granted to the inferior officers of the navy, with a view to illustrate the preceding observations, and to ascertain the precise powers given in each instance respectively. The first is, an order, in the king's name, anno 20. Ed. 3. issued by his second son, Lionel regent here during his father's absence in Normandy, to William de Rodendale, mariner, lieutenant of Robert de Ufford Earl of Suffolk, admiral of the north, at that time absent with the king in Normandy. *De accelerando arrestationem navium.*

Rot. Franciæ, anno 20. E. 3. m. 20. Rex dilecto sibi Willielmo de Radendale marenario locum tenenti dilecti et fidelis nostri Roberti de Ufford comitis Suffolk admiralli flotæ nostræ navium ab ore aquæ Thamisis versus partes boreales, et Thomæ de Drayton de Jernemouth salutem.

Sciatis quod attentis damnis et periculis quæ nobis et exercitui nostro in partibus nostris jam existentibus pro defectu navigii evenire poterunt. Assignavimus dilectos nobis Philippum de Barton et Johannem de Wolmerè servientes nostros
ad

ad arma, conjunctim et divisim, ad quater viginti grossas naves de quercu in portibus magnæ Jernemouth, Orewell, St. Botho, Kingeston super Hull, Lenne, et Goseford, et in singulis aliis portibus et locis a dicto portu de Kingeston usque London, per se et deputatos suos capiendum et arrestandum; et eas duplici eskippamento bene et sufficienter munitas, et usque portum de Winchelsea duci, et ibidem congregari faciendum: ita quod eodem naves sint ibidem die Dominico proxime post festum Assumptionis Beatæ Mariæ Virginis proxime futuro ad ultimum, promptæ ac paratæ, ac bene ac sufficienter de guerra munitæ, ad veniendum ad nos prout Dominis magistris et marenariis navium earundem tunc injungetur ex parte nostra, prout in literis nostris patentibus inde confectis plenius continetur.

Nos volentes protectionem navium prædictarum in quantum poterimus accellerari, assignavimus vos conjunctim et divisim ad accellerandum per vos et deputandos a vobis, et vestram quolibet; arrestationem, arraiationem, et munitionem navium prædictarum, viis et modis quibus expedire videritis: et ad easdem naves arrestari, congregari, et muniri, et usque dictum portum de Wynchelsea citra dictam diem Dominicam per avisamentum prædictorum Philippi et Johannis, vel eorum alterius duci faciendum: nec non ad omnes dominos, magistros et

et marinarios, qui in executione præmissarum rebelles, contrarii vel remissi fuerint, tanquam nostros et regni nostri Angliæ prædiores; habita consideratione quod ab obsequio nostro de dictis partibus Normanniæ contra injunctionem nostram eis per nos inde factam, prodicionaliter recesserunt: capiendi et arrestandi et terras tenementa bona et castella sua in manum nostrum seiziendi et corpora prædictorum rebellium prisonis nostris committendi, in eisdem moraturis quousque de eorum punitione aliter duxerimus ordinandum.

Et ideo vobis mandamus quod circa præmissa omnia et singula, omnibus aliis prætermiſſis intendatis et ea cum omni celeritate qua poteritis faciatis et expleatis in forma prædicta. Damus autem universis ac singulis admirallis et eorum locum tenentibus, vicecomitibus, majoribus, ballivis, ministris, dominis, magistris, constabulariis et marenariis navium, ac aliis fidelibus nostris tam infra libertates quam extra tenore præsentium et cuilibet vestrum ac deputandis a vobis ac quolibet vestrum in præmissis omnibus et singulis faciendo explendo ac exequendo intendentes sint, obedientes, consulentes ac auxiliantes, quoties et prout vos vel aliquis vestrum, seu deputati vestri prædicti eis vel eorum alicui scire fecerint vel fecerit ex parte nostra et quod iidem vicecomites ballivi ac ministri omnes contrarios et rebelles quos in hac parte arrestari contigerit a vobis et quolibet vestrum

vestrum ac dictis deputandis vestris recipiant et in prifoni nostris falvo custodiri faciant ficut prædictum eft, &c.

In cujus rei testimonium, &c.

Teſte cuſtode Angliæ apud Wyndefore 6 die Auguſti, per ipſum regem et conſilium. Rymer's Coll. vol. 7. p. 109. —113. vera copia.

II. The next are letters patent of king Edward the Fourth, in the ſecond year of his reign, anno 1461, to certain maſters of ſhips (for, as I obſerved before, it is evident that the captain's authority did not extend over the mariners, or the direction or management of the ſailors, but was confined to the ſoldiers on board, and I rather incline to think that there were no captains, but maſters only, appointed to thoſe ſhips where ſoldiers were not on board) to arreſt and detain maſters and mariners for the ſupply of the fleet then fitting out. Rymer's Coll. vol. 1. No. 72. p. 281. Aſc. Catal. 4613.

Pat. 2. E. 4. prs. 1me. m. 4. in dorſo. De arreſtando et capiendò marenarios.

Rex dilectis ſibi Johanni Bordeaux et Roberto Skeynes magiſtris duarum navium, quarum una vocatur la Catharina Dureux, et altera la Maria Kent, ſalutem.

Sciatis quod aſſignavimus vos conjunctim et diviſim, ad tot magiſtros et marenarios quot pro conduçtione navium prædictarum,

tarum, quas ad proficiscendum supra mare cum aliis navibus in resistantiam inimicorum nostrorum ibidem ordinaverimus, necessarii fuerint et opportuni, ubicunque inveniri poterunt tam infra libertates quam extra; arrestandos et capiendos et eosdem magistros et marenarios in navibus prædictis ad servendum nobis in iisdem ex causa prædicta ponendos, et poni faciendos. Et ideo vobis mandamus, &c. * * * *

Damus autem, * * * &c. (both wanting). In cujus, &c.
Teste rege apud Westm. 16mo die Junii. Per consilium.

Consimiles literæ regis patentes diriguntur personis subscriptis, Johanni Porter, magistro navis vocat le Trinite Warrewyk. Johanni Hartylpoole, magistro navis vocat le Christopher Warrewyk. To Thomas Williams and Richard Barre, masters of the ships George and the Christopher. Richard Strange, master of the shippe called the Catherine Warwick. Thomas Philip, master of a ship called the Marie Clyff et Ottom Colyn. William Thomas, master of the Marie Warrewyke. William Fetherstone, master of the ship called the Marie Grace, belonging to Ralph Downet and Jo. Mewes. Rymer's Manusc. Coll. ad annum, p. 282.

The next instrument is to appoint three commissioners, whether Serjeant at Arms, masters, or of what description is not mentioned, to superintend the arresting and detaining ships,

E c

masters

masters and mariners, and to see them delivered on board the respective ships of the fleet then fitting out; and likewise to superintend the furnishing the fleet with a double equipment of rigging, stores and victualling sufficient for the service from Rotul. 2. E. 4. prs. 1. m. 4.

III. Rex dilectis sibi Johanni Twyer armigero, Thomæ Edmond et Johanni Sorrell, salutem.

Sciatis quod cum nos quandam armatam ad proficiscendum supra mare in resistantiam inimicorum nostrorum ibidem se tenentium ordinaverimus, ac nos de navibus et vasis pro conductione armatæ prædictæ, ac victualibus pro eisdem sufficientibus providere volentes; assignavimus vos et conjunctim et divisim, ad tot naves et vasa quot pro conductione armatæ prædictæ necessariæ fuerint et opportunæ, et ad magistros ac marenarios pro gubernatione earundem navium et vasorum competentes, ubicunque infra comitatus Norfolciæ et Suffolciæ inveniri poterunt tam infra libertates quam extra arrestandos et capiendos, et eosdem magistros et marenarios ad deserviendum nobis in navibus ac vasis prædictis ponendum, et poni faciendum: nec non ad quæcunque genera victualium pro vitellatione navium et vasorum prædictorum necessaria et opportuna, ubicunque infra comitatus prædictos tam infra libertates quam extra inveniri poterunt, similiter capiendum et providendum: et ideo vobis mandamus, &c.

Damus

Damus autem universis et singulis vicecomitibus, majoribus, ballivis, constabulariis, ac aliis officariis, ministris et subditis nostris quibuscunque, nec non magistris et marenariis quarumcunque navium et vasorum tam infra libertates quam extra, tenore præsentium firmiter in mandatis, quod vobis et cuilibet vestrum, in executione præmissorum intendentes sint, assistentes et obedientes diligenter.

In cujus, &c.

Teste rege apud Westmonasterium, primo die Julii. Rymer's Manusc. Coll. ad annum.

The following detached particulars extracted from Otho, E. ix. are of the date of the sixteenth century, greatly posterior to the times I am more immediately treating of. But I flatter myself they will prove an acceptable communication to the reader, as they are the earliest of the kind I have been able to meet with, and contain much curious and valuable information, as to the minutiae of naval arrangement in the mode and price of victualling, tackle and stores, and the appointment of subordinate officers and servants on board the ships; and thereby enable him to form a somewhat more competent idea of and to supply the defects of the earlier accounts of the fourteenth century as to these particulars.

IV. The purport of an indenture made between queen Elizabeth, on the one part, and Edward Bareffe, Esquire, Surveyor of all her Majesty's victuals for the sea, on the other part, I conjecture in or near the 7th year of her reign.

The order of which victualling shall be made or performed as in this present indenture is expressed.

1st, Every man to have for his allowance, by the day, one pound of biscuit, one gallon of beer, and two pounds of beef, with salt, for the Sundays, Mondays, Tuesdays, and Thursdays; and for the Wednesdays, Fridays, and Saturdays every man to have, by the day, one quarter of a stock-fish, half a quarter of a pound of butter, and a quarter of a pound of cheese; saving for the Fridays to have the fish, butter and cheese, but for one meal, or else instead of stock-fish, herrings or fresh fish in proportion. The victuals to be approved by the head officers of the admiralty. The victualler to make allowance to the Purser for necessaries, as wood, candles, dishes, cannes, and lanterns, in times of service by the seas; a four pence for every man by the month, and two shillings to every ship for lading charges, and for harbour eight pence for every man's charges by the month. To deliver good and seasonable meat to the pursers for every head on board, when
the

the ships lye in the Thames, at the storehouse at Radcliffe; when at Chatham and Fillingham, at the storehouse at Rochester; when at Portsmouth, at the storehouse there; when in the narrow seas at the storehouse at Dover: to have always in hand at the four storehouses above-mentioned, a store of victual for one thousand men for a month, and to pay the rent of such storehouses. For which her Majesty indents, to pay the said surveyor Edward Borellé, at the rate of four pence half penny for each man per day, while the ships are in harbour; and five pence a head each, while the ships are out at sea. The surveyor to deliver in and exhibit his accounts to the Exchequer, to be signed by the officers, and paid without comptrollment, the duplicate of such account to be a full discharge to such surveyor against the queen, her heirs and successors. The said surveyor to have in preste of 1981l. 4s. od. for the whole year; 165l. 2s. od. monthly, and the further sum of 500l. to keep up his store aforesaid; he to account for and repay the last sum to her Majesty at the expiration of the indenture. (No date). Otho, E. ix.

V. An abstract of the charges paid for victualling in several different years of queen Elizabeth's reign.

Charges

VI. Fish of Holland, lynge, one fish will serve					
three messes of four men, total 12, one					
day,			—	—	—
—			—	—	—
				£ 9	12 0
Candles one pound a night, at 3d. per pound, 168					
nights,			—	—	—
				2	2 0
Firewood, one thousand billets, per month, for the					
ship, at 12s. per thousand,			—	—	—
				3	12 0
Sweet oyl, half a pint each, 32 men the month, at					
6 months, at 6d. per pint,			—	—	—
				2	8 0
Vinegar, at a pint a man, per month as before, at					
8d. the gallon,			—	—	—
				0	16 0
Biscuit, a pound each of the 32 men, per day, 6					
months, at xs. per hundred,			—	—	—
				26	0 0
Beer, 3 quarts a day each man, total 18 tons, 144					
gallons, at 45s. per ton,			—	—	—
				42	16 0
Pork and bacon, 2 fresh days, 1 pound each man,					
at 2d. per pound, 1536 lb.			—		
				12	16 0
Beef, the other two fresh days, a pound each man,					
at 2d. one-half. per lb. 1536 lb.			—		
				16	0 0
Butter, quarter of a pound a man a day, at 4d. the					
pound, and one-third of a pound of cheese, at					
2d. a pound,			—	—	—
				2	16 4
					Oat-

Oatmeal, 1 pint each a day, at 3s. the bushel,	-	1	16	0
Salt a pint each man, a month, 9s. at 1d. per lb.	-	0	9	0
Mustard seed, a pint each, a month, at 4s. a bushel,		0	12	0

Tot. for vict. a ship complement 32 men for 6 months, £ 131 15 4

Tempore R. Eliz. Otho, E. ix.

VII. Contract for victualling ships in harbour, dated July 31, 1597, anno 40th of queen Elizabeth, a year of dearth.
1st estimate, an. 31. Eliz. 2d, estimate, an. 40. Eliz.

Wheat, at 20s. per quarter,	—	—	£ 0 40 0
Malt, at 15s. per quarter,	—	—	0 23 0
Beer, at 24s. per ton,	—	—	0 33 0
Cask beer, 6s. 8d. per ton,	—	—	0 12 0
Beef, at 12s. 6d. per hundred,	—	—	0 20 0
Stock-fish, at 12l. per last,	—	—	£ 15 et 20 0
Linges, at 3l. per hundred,	—	—	5 5 0
Butter, at 40s. per barrell,	—	—	4 0 0
Cheese, at 28s. per wey,	—	—	0 55 0
Prices provisions cost, 1st estimate 1857l. 15s. 5d. 2d estimate 2649l. 12s. 5d. ob.			
Surcharge by overplus of price,	—	£ 791 17 0 ob.	

VIII. For

VIII. For 800 boulds of Ipswich canvass for sails, at 30s. the bould, —	£ 1200 0 0
500 boulds of Danske poldavies, for hanging the cabins for the whole fleet, at 20s. the bould, -	500 0 0
For the making of them, — —	300 0 0
For boats, pinnaces, and boataces, —	200 0 9
For all sorts of sea-store for same ships, —	1500 0 0
For the rigging wages of 200 men for two months, at 10s. each, and for sea wages of 3730 men for three months, at 14s. one with another, -	7333 0 0
For the sea wages of 2550 men in the ten other ships mentioned in a former estimate, for one month of twenty-eight days, at 14s. each, to make the time of their service complete for three months, — — —	1785 0 0
For coat-money for 1500 men, at 4s. the man,	300 0 0
For rigging-victuals of 200 men for two months, at 7d. ob. each a day, — — —	350 0 0
For the sea victuals of 3730 men for three months, at 8d. a day each, — —	10444 0 0
For the refreshing of paintings, for waste cloaths and top-arms, — — —	335 0 0
For 16 great anchors, 12 boat-anchors, and 12 pinnacle anchors, by estimation, —	670 0 0

[The top of the second page consumed by the fire, remains legible for conduct in discharge for

3,400 men at Portsmouth, but this sum destroyed]

Total of page 1, 28,682l. page 2, 3,990l. in all 32672 0 0

To the Treasurer, presently, 2400l.	} - Total £19268 0 0
2d payment, 6 weeks hence, 9890l.	
3d, at the end of the term, 7478l.	

To the Victualler, presently, - - -	} - Total £13324 0 0
2d payment, at more leisure, - - -	
3d, before the ships go out, - - -	

Signed with the autograph of Foulke Greville,
Henry Palmer, and Jos. Trevor. Otho, E. ix.

It appears from Harl. Manusc. 6279, p. 8, that Mr. Fulk Greville was Treasurer of the navy in 1599, and John Trevor Surveyor of the navy; and from page 11, that Sir Henry Palmer was made Comptroller of the navy in 1600, which nearly ascertains the date of the above paper.

IX. I shall close this subject of the victualling the navy with the insertion of the following extracts from Harl. Manusc. No. 5177. which I believe give the first instance where the office of Surveyor-general of all the king's victuals for the sea was put into commission, as it is held at present.

Anno 20. Regis Jacobi, January 1st, 1621, a grant to Alan Apsley knight and others, to be the officers of the admiralty and marine Causes, and also Surveyors-general of
all

all victuals for ships and marine affairs with a salary of 50l. per annum, for their lives.

Anno 20. Jacobi, January 9th, a grant to Alan Apfley, knight and others, of an yearly sum of 9600l. for the victualling of the navy; to be paid by the farmers of the customs.

Also set down to Sir Alan Apfley and Sir Sampson Darrell, divers covenants and agreements to be performed, and the manner of victualling the navy, dated the 9. Jan. anno 20. Rs. Jacobi. Harl. Manusc. 5177. p. 29.

The tenth contains miscellaneous extracts of the prices of divers implements, tools and other necessaries on ship-board, taken from the admiralty accounts in Otho, E. ix. of queen Elizabeth's reign.

Shovells 6 dozen, and spades 3 dozen, at 7 shillings the dozen,

Turf spades 8d. a piece, baskets 8d.

Wheelbarrows and handbarrows, ready framed, but

packed up in pieces, in all xx,	—	£	5	0	0
Two grinding stones and whetstones, at xs.	—	—	1	0	0
12 Crows of iron, at 2s. 6d. each,	—	—	1	10	0
Pickaxes helved 12, at 2s.	—	—	1	4	0
Sledges of 16 lb. a piece, 2, at 5s. 6d.	—	—	0	11	0
4, at 8lb. at 2s. 6d.	—	—	0	10	0
25 wedges, at 4lb. wt. each, some less, and a few bigger,	—	—	—	—	—
in all,	—	—	—	—	—

Carpenters tools of all sorts for three mens work,	-	4	0	0
Smiths anvill and tools furnished,	— —	6	13	4
Long sawes for plank and timber, called whip sawes,				
12, at 6s. and two handsawes, at 2s. 8d. each,				
Bricks, at 10s. per thousand, tiles, at 12s. per thousand,				
Pitch, 8 barrells, and tar 4 barrells, in all,	—	7	0	0
Oakham, 50 stone, at 6d.	— —	1	5	0
Tallow, 2 hundred, hard,	— —	2	10	0
One thousand 3d. nails,	— — —	0	3	4
Rosen, 5 cwt.	— — —	3	6	8
Chalk, 1 ton, for coopers and others,	—	0	5	0
Otho, E. ix.				

But to proceed, we may next observe that the ships were taken up and commissioned every year in number and force appportionate to the emergency of the service required, and that for eight months service only at the most in the year, and often for a shorter time. That in common years in times of peace, or even in time of war, where there was no previous intelligence of preparation of our hostile neighbours of extraordinary armaments in great naval force to attack or invade this country, or similar intentions of attack or invasion meditated on our side against foreign powers; the naval
force

force of this kingdom for the year, seldom exceeded six or eight great ships, with barges, ballingers and pinnaces, in proportion, some years less, and in some too perhaps none at all. At least, I have some foundation for this last conjecture, and I advance it as a conjecture merely, from observing that in the statement given in to the high Court of Parliament by that great and able minister Sir Ralph Lord Crombwell Treasurer of England, of the whole of the public expenditures for the twelfth year of king Henry the Sixth, 1433; There is no one article for the extra charge or expenditure of the navy for that year, except this one single item,

For the guard and repairs of the king's ships, 100l. Vide the account, Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 91. and No. 22. p. 84.

We may observe too farther, with regard to the manning of the ships put into commission every year, during the 14th century, their complement of men was probably nearly the same with that stated in the ordinance of parliament for the keeping of the sea in the 20th year of Henry the Sixth, before recited at large; that is to say, for a great ship one hundred and fifty mariners; for a barge eighty men; for a ballinger forty men, and for a pinnace twenty-five men. That the entire complements were made up of nearly one-half of mariners and the other moiety of men at

arms

arms and archers ; and that of the mariners who seem to be the only meer seamen trained up regularly to the marine service, and upon whom rested the care and management of working the ship's way, there are only three orders or degrees mentioned ; the Masters, one to each ship, at four pounds, five shillings and four pence for their wages per month, over and above their pay as common seamen ; the Quarter-masters receiving half the extra pay, if two in each ship ; (Vide ordinance 20. H. 6.) and the mariners each having two shillings per month wages, and for dyet fourteen pence per week each man. The admirals of the north and west, the Captains or knights, the Under-captain or Esquire, (as they are called in the above quoted ordinance,) the men at arms and the archers serving on board the fleet, to the amount of about half the complement of every ship, were taken from the military roll, and paid according to the same rate with those of the same ranks and degrees serving by land, as appears from the state of the public expenditure above referred to, so far as relates to the men of arms and archers.

With respect to all the superior officers serving at sea, as I before observed, the Lord Admiral only and his Lieutenant, or when that office was afterwards divided, the admirals of the north and west and their respective lieutenants ; were the only officers

officers who had a stated fixed annual pay or fee, by the year, whether there were ships in actual service or not; that is to say, the Lord Admiral 200 marks, and the lieutenant 100l. per annum, and for two clerks, one, at one shilling, and the other at 8d. per, day 30l. 8s. 4d.; and during the time of actual service, while any fleet or ships were in commission, the Lord Admiral or the admirals of the north and west and their lieutenants, the Captains, Under-captains, Knights, Esquires, Gentlemen, archers, &c. serving on board the ships, were entitled to their daily military pay and subsistence, according to their several estates and degrees, the same respectively as those serving by land. What that pay and allowance was is clearly and precisely defined and ascertained, and that too for the very year and expedition we are to treat of, in the twentieth of Edward the Third, in the Harl. Manusc. No. 176. p. 17. The which account I shall insert at length when I come to treat of the army department, and shall only observe here in general, that a Duke was allowed for his dyet, by the day, as it is there stated, 13s. 4d. An Earl of the Blood Royal the same. An Earl; not of the Blood Royal, for his dyet, by the day, six shillings and eight pence. A Viscount five shillings. A Baron, for his dyet by the day, four shillings. A Knight two shillings. An Esquire, for the body for his dyet, by the day,

two

two shillings. An Esquire (not of the body) one shilling and sixpence [with an extra allowance to each degree of one shilling per day, for the dyet of every man and horse they brought into the field] and every Gentleman's pay for his dyet thus stated; a Gentleman for him and his servant, by the day, two shillings. The man at arms one shilling, and the archer of foot 6d. a day; but for dyet allowed to the latter only 3d. per day; and a Welchman on foot for his dyet only two pence per day; a ship-boy 1d. ob.; archers on horse vyntners of footmen, standard-bearers, serjeants and cryers being Welchmen; for their dyet four pence per day each. Harl. Manusc. No. 176. p. 17.

Memorandum in the Lord Treasurer Cromwell's account of the revenues from Carnarvon and Merioneth in North Wales, it appears that the pay of the gensdarms and archers there was less one-third than that of the English archers, from the following extract.

Memorandum, to be deducted in future years the pay of two captains, at 8d. per day each, and of 54 soldiers, at 4d. per day each. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 90. and No. 22. p. 82.

We may observe that the usage adopted in these early ages of apportioning the annual fee or rewards of offices or employments held under the king, not to the duties of the respective offices,

offices, but to the estate, rank and degree of the holder, was not confined to the naval or military department, but extended to all even the highest civil appointments, and was continued down so low as Henry the Sixth's reign, as appears from the ordinance of parliament for the appointment of the annual stipend, fee or rewards of the respective members of the Council of Regency, anno 2. H. 6. 1423, which states, that after due inspection and search for precedents during the reigns of Richard the Second and Henry the Fourth, what rewards had been assigned to the Lords of the Council yearly for their entendance, it was found that by letters of Privy Seal there had been assigned to the Tresurer, Chamberlain and Archbishop of Canterbury three hundred marks per annum; and to Henry Bishop of Winchester the same; to every other Bishop and Earl two hundred marks; to every Baron one hundred pounds, and to every Knight or Esquire forty pounds. And accordingly by letter of Privy Seal, anno 2. H. 6. there was granted to the Lords of that Council of Regency in the same proportion, that is to say, to the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Bishop of Winchester, frere du Roy Chancellor, three hundred marks each per annum; to John Bishop of London, Thomas Bishop of Durham, Philip Bishop of Worcester, Richard Earl of Warwick, Monsieur John Stafford, Tresorer

d'Engleterre, two hundred marks per annum each. To the Barons Ralph Cromwell and John Scrope one hundred marks. To Walter Hungerford and John Taploft, Banneretts, one hundred marks each. To Thomas Chaucer and William Allington, Esquires, forty pounds per annum each, so long as they shall continue of the same Council.

Provided, however, that if any of the said Councillors shall absent themselves any one day in full term time without reasonable cause to be approved by the Council, he shall forfeit in the following proportion; the absentees of 300 marks salary, twenty shillings. Those of 200 marks, salary, eight shillings and four pence; those of one hundred marks, five shillings; and those of forty pounds salary in proportion, selon l'afferrant for every such default.

See the original in the Cott. Manusc. Cleopatra, F. 4. anno 2. H. 6.

Acta Concilia, anno 1. H. 6. April 27. 1422. Agreed and finally concluded that the Earl of March shall have the custody and government of the king's dominion in Ireland, as Lieutenant, to receive annually 5000 marks for that service, and that the said Earl shall take all the revenues of that Lordship as far as they shall extend towards liquidating that amount, and the remainder here in England, purported from the Latin.

Acta

Acta Con. 1. H. 6. 1422. March 2. The same day was granted to the Earl of March, for the safe keeping of the land of Ireland, in case that he went over there in his own person within the year for his wages 4000 marks per annum. And if he chose rather to send over a Baron of England his deputy, then to have 3000 marks a year, or if a Knight Batchelour, then 2000 per annum. And the Lords ordered letters to be made out under their seals to the same purport.

Acta Conc. anno 1. H. 6. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad annum.

We are next to observe, that all the officers superior and inferior, the men at arms and archers, the masters and mariners serving on board the ships were besides and exclusive of their pay and allowance for dyet farther entitled to a certain share or proportion of what are sometimes denominated the threddes or gains of warre or prize-money, accruing from the prisoners ships or goods of the enemy taken at sea, according to their respective estates, ranks and degrees, after the deduction of two-thirds of one moiety or half to the owners and proprietors of the ships, barges, ballingers and pinnaces taken into the government's service and present in the action, or if the king's ships, then the right to such third share vesting in his Majesty.

At least, from the naval ordinance above quoted, it appears that in the 20th of Henry the Sixth, anno 1441, this was the mode

of division, and that the other third of the first moiety was to the Captains and the Under-captains of the great ships only (for the barges, ballingers and pinnaces were commanded by Masters and not Captains;) and the chiefs besides sharing in a double proportion to the inferior or Under-captains; and the remaining entire moiety or half divided amongst the Masters of the ships, Quartermasters, shipmen and soldiers on board.

I have not been able as yet to recover any authentic document or authority, tending to fix and ascertain the precise mode of apportioning and dividing the prizes taken at sea in king Edward the Third's reign; but think it not improbable that it was nearly similar to the mode above recited. I find indeed in Rot. Almain, anno 13. Ed. 3. prs. 3. Mem. 8. as recited in the fifth volume Rymer's Collections, vol. 5. p. 45. Harl. Manusc. No. 4583. p. 45. a general commission made out to Nicholas Cantaloup William de Sharshull and John de Shordiold, knights, to go down to appease certain mutinies and disorders arisen betwixt Sir Robert Morle the admiral of the north, and the Captains, Masters and others of certain of the Yarmouth and other ships, about the division of prizes from the enemy; and the latter having seceded and deserted the admiral, to induce them to return to their obedience, and proceed together on the intended voyage.

If

If I could be fortunate enough to recover the proceedings taken under this commission of inquest, or any of those gentlemen who have free access to all the repositories of the public archives, and much greater abilities in researches of this kind, would make it an object of their attention and enquiry; and favour the world with the result of their discovery, it will clear up the point in question to an absolute certainty. I have only farther to add here, that the mode (from Otho, E. 9.) in king Henry the Eighth's reign of apportioning prizes appears to have been, "that the king took himself one entire half;" from the following extract of a letter from the admiral to the Lord Privy Seal, dated Dover-Road, May 24, circ. 30th year of Henry the Eighth, signed William Fitzwilliam, respecting a ship taken a prize and sent to Calais for sale. "Therefore, the next fair tyde that is I shall send the same thydder, and the money that comes thereof I shall keep in mine own hands, until that I shall know the king's pleasure and your's upon the same; which I beseech your Grace I may by this bearer, and whether I shall deliver one half thereof to the takers, *according to the order of the sea*, and keep the other half for the king's gracious use, or else that I shall kepe it holy for the king's sayd use. Also I beseech your Grace with the ten Frenchmen, whether I shall

“ shall send them to prison or ranfome them,” &c. Otho, E. ix. And this mode of division is farther confirmed by the exprefs stipulations in the indenture between the king Henry the Eighth and Sir Edward Howard before recited; and that too upon this exprefs ground, namely, because the king victualled the navy. Vide the instrument above.

I shall next proceed to collect in one point of view a miscellaneous selection of some of the more remarkable regulations, laws, facts, and circumstances relating to the navy in general. And first, with regard to the mode of proceeding against the king's subjects committing acts of piracy or illegally seizing or detaining the ships or goods of any merchant, stranger, &c. either in port or out at sea, as appears from an act of council, dated July 27, anno 4. H. 6. 1426.

Ordered and agreed that whensoever any of the subjects of our Lord the King, whether of France, England, Flanders, Aquitaine or Ireland; also any of the friends or allies of our sovereign Lord the King, or any other whatsoever, having letters of safe-conduct from him; shall come to complain to the Lord Chancellor now or for the time being, against any person or persons who or whatsoever they may be, or in whatever ports or places within the dominions of England they may reside, for having illegally seized themselves, their ships,

or

or their goods upon the high seas or elsewhere ; that then the aforesaid Lord Chancellor shall be obliged immediately to cause under the authority of the aforesaid act, the aforesaid persons so offending as is presupposed to be arrested wheresoever they shall be found within the dominions of England or Ireland, together with the ships and goods by them illegally seized as is aforesaid : and to retain them so arrested in safe custody, until full justice shall be rendered unto the party. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam ejusdem anni.

2d, The case of a ship dearrested or released by order of council, which had been afore assigned to Mr. John Stafford, Acta Concilii, anno 1mo H. 6. 1423, dated January the 15th.

Agreed that a certain ballinger of Britanny, lately assigned to Mr. John Stafford, then keeper of the Privy Seal, under the claim of the restitution of the goods of the said John, lately taken upon the sea per ipsos de Bretagne, in the time of truce, and now arrested by the admiralty of the Thames, be discharged without difficulty. And that the aforesaid John be bound to answer in the admiralty courts to the Bretons, and to prosecute for the same ballinger. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam ejusdem mensis et anni.

3. The third case is a private capture of a Spanish ship by Sir Nicholas Damory and his company in their return to England,
from

from serving the king in his wars in his dutchy of Aquitaine, and who, after taking this ship, carried her into Southampton port. The which ship was going to St. Maloe's, loaded with wine, iron, and other merchandize, the property of the French merchants of Rochelle, the king's enemys; having on board two merchants of Baion, prisoners, the king's subjects, who on their return home had been taken at sea, and their ships plundered by Spanish pirates. After due examination had, and proof of the above facts before the Lords of the King's Council, their Lordships decreed that the cargoe, the wines, iron, and other merchandises, after a valuation made upon oath by competent persons of Southampton, should under the inspection and superintendance of John de Elderton serjeant at arms sent down for that purpose, be fairly and reasonably divided betwixt Sir Nicholas de Amory and his men; and that the ship, tackling and stores should be restored entire to the Master and mariners of the said Spanish ship; and moreover, a reasonable satisfaction besides to be made to them for their passage.

Before I proceed to quote the original instrument itself I would observe, that the right vested in the Lords of the Council of adjudicating en dernier resort captures at sea to be legal prizes, appears from this instance to be of very high antiquity, indeed coæval with the Council itself.

And

And in farther confirmation of this I will beg leave to adduce an extract from the Cottonian Manusc. Cleopatra, c. 3. in which there is a curious paper stating the extent of the power and authority of the King's Council about the year 1394, anno 18. R. 2. The paper is in many parts erased and absolutely illegible, but article the 5th is legible and is as follows.

Item, des profits et emoluments des monoye et bullions, et de la prise des Prisoners, villes et lieux, niefs, carrakes, biens venduz, pris de la guerre par terre et par mere; et des benefices et autres possessions des cardinaulx * * * et tous autres aliens. Cleopatra, c. 3. No.

But to return to the instrument above-mentioned, it is an order of Council, dated Westminster, May 7th, from the Pat. Claus. 21. Ed. 3. prs. 1. m. 12. copied by Rymer in his Collections, vol. 7. Aysc. Manusc. 4586. p. 201. and is as follows.

Rex majori et ballivis villæ Suthton, salutem.

Cum dilecti et fideles nostri Nicholaus Damory et quidam alii subditi nostri in regno nostro Angliæ venientes per mare de ducatu nostro Aquitaniæ, ubi in servicio nostro per tempora non modica extiterant versus regnum nostrum Angliæ; quandam navem de Hispania vinis ferro et aliis mercandis inimicorum nostrorum de Francia apud la Rochelle versus villam de

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

42

43

prædictam cum apparatu et attilio ejusdem, dictis magistro et marenariis integre restitui; et eis de fræcto navis illius sine delatione aliqua satisfieri faciatis juxta considerationem supra dictam. Nos de vinis ferro et aliis mercandisiis in navi prædicta existentibus, et quæ, et cujus modi, et cujus pretii, et quibus personis liberata fuerint, et quantum pro fræcto prædicto solvi contigerit, et de nomine navis prædictæ, ac domini et magistri ejusdem, ac de toto factò vestro in hac parte per dictum servientem nostrum ad arma certificantes indilate.

Teste custode prædicto apud Redyng 7 die Maii,
per totum consilium, p. 201.

4. The fourth case contains the judgement passed by the Lords of the Council, July the 20th, anno 4. H. 6. 1425, against the abbot of St. Austin's, Canterbury, for certain piracy and depredation committed by his people at sea on a ship and cargoe of wine belonging to certain merchants at Bruges and Bulloin, to the following purport.

Anno 4. H. 6. 1425, July 20, in the refectory of the friars preachers at London; the Lords of the Council gave judgment against Marcellus, Abbot of St. Austin's, in Canterbury, in placito of the taking and plundering of a certain ship and of the wines contained therein, belonging to John Lorfame of Abbotsvill, and to certain other persons of the

same city, and some others of the citys of Bruges and Bulloin; upon the high seas, within the dominions and by the subjects of our sovereign Lord the King; condemning the said abbot in seven nobles for every ton of wine, namely, thirty-nine, which came into the possession of the abbot, by his own confession; and in six shillings for every ton of wine, namely, thirty-seven, which were destroyed by the fault of the abbot; and in sixty nobles for the other damages and expences of the aforefaid partys injured, and of their proctors. And the Lords aforefaid ordered that the Privy Seal warrant should be made out to the Chancellor, requiring him to see to the execution of this judgment ut sibi videbitur expedire. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam.

The fifth case is an order of Council for the dearresting and discharge of a ship of Catalonia, upon the grounds therein alledged, notwithstanding the commander had entered into a recognizance and bond of 2000l. to the admiral of the west the Duke of Bedford.

Acta Concil. anno 5. H. 6. 1426. July the 8th. Agreed that the commander of a certain gally of Catalonia, which had lately been arrested and detained by a deputy of the admiral's near Sandwich, and the commander bound to the admiral in a recognizance and obligation in the sum of two thousand

thousand pounds ; yet notwithstanding such obligation that he should be at liberty to depart with the aforesaid ship and merchandize, and goe where he pleased ; inasmuch as at the time of the seizure, he had letters of safe-conduct signed by our Lord the King, which the Lords of the Council allowed ; their Lordships at the same time engaging to excuse and indemnify the aforesaid captain to the Duke of Bedford, if ever there should be occasion and opportunity should serve. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam.

The two next cases are demands of restitution of ships and cargoes illegally seized and detained by the subjects of foreign states, and contain both of them curious and valuable information, in stating the mode of retaliation and redress practised in that early age, where the ruling power in such states refused or delayed complying with such demands of restitution.

With case, abstracted from Rymer's Manusc. Coll. Aysc. Catal. 4580, p. 481—485.

Rot. Claus. 4. E. 3. m. 33.

Demand of restitution from the Earl of Flanders, before claimed by the late king Edward the Second, of a ship called the Salwe of London, and cargoe, the property of Henry le Palmer, Alan Atwarfe, Thomas Tuk, and Robert YOUN, late deceased, freighted from Leybourn with twenty-five tons and
seven

seven pipes of wine, canvass, linen cloth, and other goods and merchandize.

The which ship lying at anchor between Margate and Reculver, in the river Thames, certain Flemings attacked, killed the men on board, and carried off the vessel and cargo to the port of Swyn, states,

That upon inquisition ordered to be taken by the late king in his chancerie, the value of the ship of which John Trigge was master, was found 200 marks sterling, and of the cargo the twenty-five tons and seven pipes of wine, value at 11l. per ton, and the seven pipes at 6l. each; the canvass, linen cloth, and other merchandizes to the value of twenty-four pounds; and plate, cloaths, armour, the sailors and merchants property, to the amount of thirty pounds sterling more, besides sixty pounds in money.

That after repeated remonstrances and demands for restitution and redress had been made by the late king Edward the Second to the then Earl of Flanders, and no satisfaction could be obtained; the king, at the suit of the Mayor and Commonalty of the City of London, by and with the advice of his Council, issued out a precept to the Sheriffs of London to feize and attach all the goods and merchandizes here, belonging to the subjects of the late Earl of Flanders, and to distrain
to

to the amount of 418l. 6s. 8d. the value returned of the
aforesaid ship, wines, money, cloth and other merchandize,
and of the farther sum of 100l. for damages until full satis-
faction should be made for the said demand of 518l. 6s. 8d.
The full execution of which precept, owing to treatys and
negotiations entered into between the late king and the late
Earl of Flanders, for the amicable adjustment of this business;
had not yet taken place. That at the suit of the merchants
here upon their petition that the precept aforesaid might be
fully executed, his present Majesty had repeatedly renewed
pressing remonstrances and demands, for redress and satisfaction
to the partys for the ship, cargo, and damages aforesaid, to
save him the disagreeable necessity of proceeding to extremitys
and demanding an immediate and final answer. Teste Rege
apud Winton, 20th of March.

Rot. Claus. 4. E. 3. m. 33. D.

Pro Stephano Alleyn et aliis.

The King to William Earl of Hainault, Holland and
Zeland, patri suo carissimo, salutem, states,

That the late King Edward the Second, at the suit of Ste-
ven Alleyn, citizen of London and merchant, complaining
to him that he had freighted out from Sandwych a ship called
the Margaret of London, with forty quarters of wheat, at 20s.
per

per quarter, value 40l. thirty quarters of barley, at 13s. 4d. value 20l. four quarters of wheat-flour, at 40s. value 8l. four-score quarters grossi falis, at 20s. value 80l. with bread, ale, meat and fish, to the amount of 3l. 18s. uno panno stragolato, value 3l. 10s. chests, beds, cloths and armour, to the value of 5l.; and 3l. 15s. in cash, for a voyage to Berwick, for the support of the garrison there: and that the aforesaid ship in her voyage on the seas near Ravensore, opposite to Saltefleteby, was attacked by certain pirates of the Hainaulters, seized and with all her rigging, of the value of 40l. together with the corn, salt and other goods and chattels, amounting in the whole to the value of 200 pounds taken and carried into Seeland, in the Earl of Hanon's dominions and jurisdiction. Demanding as before a final answer as to immediate satisfaction and redress for the loss and damage sustained by the merchant aforesaid, in order to avoid the execution of a suspended precept issued by the late king to the sheriff of Norfolk and Suffolk; to take a distress upon the goods and chattels of the subjects of Hainault to be found within his bailiwick to the full amount. Aysc. Catal. 4580, p. 487.

The two next petitions appeared to me worthy of insertion as they serve to throw a light upon and explain the original grounds of misunderstanding and difference, and measures adopted

adopted in consequence, betwixt the merchants of England and those of the Hans Towns; and which were productive of such material consequences to the commerce and trade of the respective countrys on both sides the water.

Rot. Parl. anno 14. H. 6. 1435. m. 27.

To the right wise and discreet Commons of this present parliament, shewen the merchants of England, which were wont to repair unto Pruce and unto the towns of the mesne Hans; that how the Master of Pruce with the assent of them of the mesne Hans Towns, now late have banished and exiled the said English merchants out of all their lands and streams, and have put them utterly from all manner of buying and selling there, and set them fully out of their protections as their mortal enemys, for certain debts which they claim to be owing them by our sovereign Lord the King; which banishing hath been and is like to be great hurt to our sovereign Lord and to his Majesty, and to all his realme. Whereof to have remedy the said English merchants in the month of January last complained to our sovereign Lord and his Council; where by the advice of our same sovereign Lords Council was then granted, that the merchants aliens of those parts here yclepd esterlings should in these parts be entreated in like form as English merchants weren there in their parts. And thereupon was given

in charge to embassadors, which therefore passed over into Flanders, to give open relation thereof unto them of the said ports of Pruce and of the mesne Hans. And in contrary to the said grant, and the open relation thereof made as it is aforesaid, and also it is contrary to the Great Charter which is called Magna Charta, that the said esterlings are here continually sustained, and suffered to have and enjoy their libertys and privileges as freely as ever they deden ; and no English merchants may or dare in their said parts in no wise come and appear. Whereupon like it so your wise discretions to have this matter in tender consideration, and to consider how that the ambassate lately made for this matter into Flanders, caused our sovereign Lord and his said merchants to be put to great costs and expences without end or purpose, and that more cost it is like to cause at this next ambassate thereof if it be had, which may be supposed shall come to none avayl or conclusion ; and less than none other remedy thereupon here be ordained before, and thereupon ye like to beseech our sovereign Lord and his Council to ordain, that the said grant be confirmed by the authority of this present parlement. So that the said esterlings be now deprived and adnulled of their libertys and privileges in these parts, and hence to be fully banished and exiled, in like form as the Great Charter will, and as the said merchants English.

lish are out of their parts, for else in certain there is none end thereupon like to be had, and they in no wise may forbear our soverain Lord's land and streams.

Reponse. Le Roy s'avisera.

Under the royal rejection of this petition of the merchants, something of an imperfect accommodations seems to have taken place between the respective powers, but by no means such as to remove the grounds of complaint and dissatisfaction on the side of the English merchants; as appears from a renewed petition from the merchants, six years after, to the following purport.

Rot. Parl. anno 20. H. 6. m. 39.

The English merchants by petition of the Commons complain of their harsh treatment in Prussia and the Hans Towns, for that instead of enjoying their privileges and immunities as settled by old and new conventions between the respective powers, as it states “ freely and safely to come with their
 “ merchandizes into all the ports of Prussia and the Hanfes,
 “ and there to have free and safe abiding to buy and sell with
 “ their merchandize, with all manner of people; and free
 “ going from thence paying therefore their customs without
 “ any letting or new impositions and customs to be paid; and
 “ there freely to have their counsell and assembly together, and

“ their lodging together or departed, at their own pleasure;
 “ and in their persons with their goods and merchandize, so
 “ there to be ruled and demeaned, as the merchants of
 “ that party be ruled and demeaned here in England; until
 “ now of late time sith the last appointment had between
 “ you sovereign Lord and them, they have put your said Eng-
 “ lish merchants in great subjection, and taken away their old
 “ customs, libertys and freedoms, and do them great wrongs,
 “ injurys and oppressions; by the taking and withholding of
 “ their goods, and by unlawful and new impositions, finances,
 “ ransomes; and have letted and restrained them of buying
 “ and selling of their merchandizes, but of such mer-
 “ chandizes, and to such persons, as the said Prussians and
 “ Hanfes list and to none other: and dissevered and depart-
 “ ed them of their lodging charging that no man lett them
 “ none house to hire but in low cellars by earth; and also that
 “ no manner of men English shall buy ne doe make no ship
 “ ne vessell within the lands of Prussia and Hanfes Towns; to
 “ the hurt and hindering of your said merchants, and likely
 “ final destruction of a great part of your liege people and
 “ navy of England.” Praying that from the feast of Saint
 Martin next ensueing, the merchants of Prussia, and of the
 Hans Towns, and others here resident in England; might be
 restrained

restrained, limited, and suspended in the enjoyment of all their immunities, libertys and privileges here granted to them by treaty and the last convention ; until such time as the English merchants there are fully reinstated and restored to theirs, with an adequate reparation and compensation ; and in the mean time untill the Martinmas ensuing the said merchants, &c. to be treated on the same footing with the merchants of Venice and Florence, being no denizens, here resident.

Answer. Accorded to, provided an intended application to the masters of Prussia and the Hans Towns, should not previously obtain full redress, with a proviso in favour of the city of Cologne. Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 137. D.

Acta Concilii, Feb. 27th, anno 21. H. 6. 1443. at Shene. Present, &c.

The king woll that a clerk and a merchant be sent to Cologne with all Englishmens complaints upon them of Prussia, Hanze, and the Danzkers, requiring restitution to be made to the said complainants : and furthermore that it be sent unto all the customers in any port of England, commanding them to suffer them of the aforesaid countrys to come into this land, to commune, converse, and merchandize in the same land, and passe over as that they have done heretofore ; and unto the time the king give other commandment. Cleopatra, F. 5. at the date. The

The next petition probably from the church, refers to a generous interference of the king and parliament of England in a cause not immediately their own, but that of all christendome, copied from the Rolls of Parliament, anno 20. H. 6. m. 32.

To the wise and discreet Commons of this land in Parliament.

Please it your wise discretions to understand how now late the Janneyes with five great carraks full armed and arrayed for war, having in their fellowship great numbers of Saracens under covert within the said carraks, arrived and entered the port of the isle of Rhodes ; and in colouring of their untrue purposes, bearing the arms of the hospital of St. John's of Jerusalem ; and so feigning them as if they had been good friends, to the intent to make the said Saracens to have good knowledge of the entrys into the said isle : and there suddenly spoiled two ships of the religion of the said hospital, and burned a balinger of the same religion, and robbed certain persons in the said isle, and depreyed divers bestial under the said colour of deceit ; to great reproof of all christians, great hurt and disworship of the master and brethren of the convent of Rhodes, as of all other inhabitants in the said isle : and thereupon like it your wise discretions to pray the king our soverain Lord and all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in
this

this present parlement assembled, that all the Janneyes being in this land, be had in such reputation and concept; as they that been enemys to the christian people, succourers and helpers to the ennemys of the christian faith, and miscreants; and to purvey such remedy and punishment against their demerits and evil purpose; as may be pleasant to God, profit and ease to christian people, honour and worship to this land, and surety and salvation of the said holy religion: for the love of God and in the way of charity, considering that it is written and notified, and ordeyned to be notified to all christian princes of the said treason, desiring of them to have the said Janneyes in like concept and reputation.

Resp. The king more amply informed of this request will demean himself therein, as a christian prince, owes to doe in keeping of the christian faith. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 137.

An order of council for the making out letters patent empowering the Bishop of Nantz and other Britons to export certain articles therein specifyd.

Acta Concilii, anno 10. HL 6. July 14. apud fratres prædicatores, &c.

Assented to and agreed by the Lords of the Council that the Lord John de Malestun Bishop of Nantz, Chancellor of Brittainy,

Brittainy, Sir Bertrand de Tryal, Sir Thomas de Cryfac, and John de Friſſiaco, Councillors of the aforeſaid Duke of Brittainy, have letters patent under the great ſeal, to ſhip in the port of London, or in the port of Southampton, or the port of Lymeton; Sarges, beds, bedding, chamber furnitures, robes, utenſils of tin, certain peices of woollen cloth, glaſs, other houſhold utenſils, 100 bows and 100 quivers of arrows; and export them ſecurely and ſafely from England to the parts of Brittany, without any moleſtation or impediment whatſoever. See Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

The form of a protection of the ſhip, merchants, paſſengers and the cargoe, belonging to two merchants ſtrangers of Dunkirk; extracted from the Acts of the Council, anno 21. H. 6. Feb. 27.

The king took into his ſafe conduct by his letters patent, Walter Johnſon, and John Dayrell, burghers of Dunkirk in Flanders, fiſhers and victuallers of England, and poſſeſſors and maſters of a ſhip called the Gabriell of Dunkirk; and twelve perſons, merchants and mariners in their company, and their goods and merchandiſes being in the ſaid ſhip, for to come into the king's lordſhips, &c. with their goods and merchandiſes; there abide, recharge, &c. notwithstanding every and all claules of proviſo accuſtomed, to endure for fifteen months next enſuing. See Cleopatra, F. 5. at the date.

I pro-

I proceed to state all the several grounds of forfeiture of merchant ships or cargoes, which I have hitherto met with as held for law, or enforced during the fourteenth century.

The first I shall mention is the having merchandize or goods on board that had not paid duty. And the penalty here seems to have been exacted with great severity until it was moderated by a statute passed, anno 38. E. 3. m. 26. as appears from Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 64. D.

The printed book * that the whole ship shall not be forfeited for a trifle therein not customed, agreeth with the record.

* The printed book, an expression which occurs perpetually in the parliamentary rolls of this reign, here means the petition or the resolution of the Lords and Commons after it has received the royal assent, the which is afterwards reduced, (either by certain Bishops, Lords and Commons appointed thereto, or else ex officio by the judges) into the form of an estatute, and enacted or ingrossed in the great roll of parliament, and if reported by the house that the print and record agree with each other in form and substance, then, I believe, according to the practice of those days, it was proclaimed in the great hall of Westminster, and became and operated as the law of the land.

Anno 14. Ed. 3. 1340. Sundry Bishops, Lords and Commons were appointed daily to sit until they had reduced the afore said grants (the supplies granted severally by the Lords, the Clergy, and the Commons) into the form of a statute; and they brought the same into the form of a statute, agreed upon by the king and the whole estates. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 16.

Acta Concilii, anno 1. H. 6. Januarii die vicesimo sexto.

Eodem die lecti fuerunt per clericum parliamenti coram dominis, actus habit et facti in ultimo parlamento. Qui ibidem habuit in mandatis de ostendendo dictos actus iusticiariis regis utriusque banci, ad effectum quod illi actus

And in the Acts of Council, anno 21. H. 6. March 6. Present in Arden's house at Westminster, the Chancellor, St. David's, Earl of Suffolk and Treasurer of England,

2d. Art. Also it was commanded that there be made letters unto the Chancellor of England that for as much as it is said, that Bower yeoman of the crown and * * * will avail the king in his customs and subsidys of merchandizes not customed, shipped in time passed; they having the third part of such goods, as there heretofore were by the Lombards shipped uncustomed, and that shall be learned by their means and labours; that my said Lord Chancellor make unto them therefore such letters of commission as that the case shall require. See Cleopatra, F. 5. at the date.

In the subsidy act, anno 2. H. 4. 1401. There is a very favourable extenuation of the severity of the penalty on such merchants as neglect to accustom their merchandize, viz. that they shall only forfeit double customs, without any farther for-

qui erunt statuta regni per ipsos videantur, et redigantur in mundum et præterea quod ostendantur dominis, et proclamentur; et quod aliorum actuum tangentium gubernationem dominorum de concilio et regni, dimittantur copię cum clerico concilii regis, et quod simul omnes redacti in scriptis irrotulentur in cancellaria ut moris est. Manusc. Cotton. Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 7.

feiture

feiture or penalty. Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 20. p. 66. and No. 21. p. 227.

The second ground of forfeiture appears from the following proclamation, containing a prohibition to export timber or boards adapted for ship-building, under the penalty of forfeiture, from which it should seem that even in those early days the British oak was in high estimation for these purposes.

Rot. Claus. 15. E. 3. prs. 2d. m. 15. D.

Rex vicecomiti Cantiaë, salutem, præcipimus tibi firmitur injungentes, quod statim visis præsentibus in balliva tua tam infra libertates quam extra, ubi expedire videris; publice proclamari, et ex parte nostra firmiter facias inhiberi, ne quis subforisfactura omnium quæ nobis forisfacere poterit, bordas seu maeremium, aliqua apta pro navibus faciendis, extra regnum nostrum ad partes externas ducat, vel cariari faciat, sine mandato nostro speciali. Et si quem post proclamationem et inhibitionem hujusmodi inveneris, hujusmodi maeremium seu bordas extra regnum nostrum ad dictas partes ducentes, tunc maeremium et bordas illas in manum nostrum sine dilatione seisciri, et salvo custodiri facies, quousque aliud super hoc a nobis habueris in mandatis. Nosque de nominibus illorum, qui contra hujusmodi inhibitionem nostram quicquam in præ-

missis fecerint, reddas in cancellaria nostra sub sigillo tuo, de tempore in tempus, distincte et aperte certiores.

Teste rege apud Westm. 3tio die Maii, per ipsum regem.

Eodem modo mandatum vicecomitibus Essex, Hertford, Surrey, Suffolk, Norfolk, Suffex, and Hants. Aysc. Catal. 4584. p. 97.

A third ground of forfeiture, the freighting prohibited goods to or from prohibited ports.

Rot Parl. anno 1. Ri. 2di. 1377. It was agreed that all merchants, Gascoigne and English, might freely transport to Gascoigne and Brest to the king's friends there, all manner of corn and other victuals, and also leather gloves, purses and caps, leather points, shoes, (hose) and such other kind of small merchandizes; notwithstanding any ordinance of the staple, but not elsewhere, on pain of forfeiture. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 109.

Acta Concilii, anno 15. H. 6. 1437. April 13th.

Our soveraign Lord the king for certain causes him thereunto moving, by and with the advice and assent of the Lords of the Council willeth and commandeth, that warrants, &c., be made made out to the Chancellor of England to make out writs under the Great Seal severally to all the king's customers and officers of every port throughout England; strictly charging

ing them not to permit the exportation of any woollen cloths (but of wooll only) out of this realm without special license from the king, by any persons whatever, unless such foreigners as are in amity with the king, and expressly privileged by his Majesty to export them, as are the merchants of Prussia and Portugal; provided always that no statute heretofore made be suspended or infringed by this injunction. Vide Cleopatra, vol. 4. at the date.

Rot. Parl. anno 15. H. 6. m. 21.

Also prayen the Commons for as much as by the laws ordained that no man may carry ne load, no corn out of England without license of you our soverain Lord, because of which farmers and other men that use manuring of land, might not sell their corn but to low price, to great hindring of all the realm: Please it to our soveraign Lord and all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, that it may be ordained by authority of this present parliament, that it shall be lawful for every man to ship and carry all manner of corns and grains out of this realm into what place him shall like (except only unto the king's enemys) as oftimes and as long as one quarter of wheat exceed not the price of six shillings and eight pence, and one quarter of barley three shillings in that port there that wheat and barley is so shipped, (the king ever content
of

of his customs and dutys) and that without any license therefore to be sued, notwithstanding all other ordinances thereof made as contrary afore this.

Resp. Be it as it is desired unto the next parliament.
Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 108.

The next is a petition of the Commons to restrain the merchants from taking up forrein bottoms to transport their merchandize where English may be had, which is a fourth ground of forfeiture.

Rot. Parl. anno 15. Ri. 2. 1391. m. 50. That no English merchants doe lade in any foreign bottom their merchandize, where they may have English bottoms to serve, on pain to forfeit the same.

Answer. The statutes heretofore made therefore shall be observed.

The fifth ground of forfeiture. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 188.

By the old law, in case of a violent or even casual death happening on board, the ship was forfeitable to the king, as appears from the following petition of the Commons, that in case of a violent death happening on board, while the ship is in port, the ship should not be forfeited.

Anno 50. E. 3. 1376. m. 133. The inhabitants of the port towns in England pray, that whereas it often happeneth
that

that a man or boy being in one of their ships or vessels, and by mishap falling therefrom is drowned, their ship or vessel is thereupon seized as a deodand, that therein remedy may be had.

Answer. If the vessel be upon the sea it shall be judged no deodand, and if upon the fresh water, let complaint be made to the king, who will extend favour. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 90.

Anno 1. H. 4. 1399. m, 153. The Commons petition that no barge on the Thames be forfeited as a deodand.

Answer. It shall be as herefore.

A sixth ground of forfeiture was, any merchant denison's shipping or coqueting woolls the property of a stranger as his own, with a view to evade the additional customs upon the merchants aliens, as appears from the following statute.

Anno 14. Ri. 2di. membrane 26. It is enacted that no denison doe ship or cocquet woolls or other merchandizes in his own name, which belong to strangers, to forbear the king of his custome, upon pain of forfeiture. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 181.

The seventh ground of forfeiture I shall mention is the restraining the passage over sea of all Earls, Barons, Magnates, Knights, men and horses at arms or armour, &c. without the
expres

express license of the king, by writs of proclamation, *ne exeant regno*, addressed to the Sheriffs of London, and of the several countys respectively, and to the Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports; which are very frequent in those early ages. I shall adduce an example of each.

Rot. Claus. 16. E. 3. p. 1. m. 37. D.

Rex vicecomitibus London, salutem.

Præcipimus vobis firmiter injungentes, quod per totam ballivam tuam in singulis locis ubi expedire videritis tam infra libertates quam extra, publice proclamari et ex parte nostra inhiberi faciatis; ne quis comes, baro, *magnas*, miles, seu alius homo ad arma, extra regnum nostrum sub forisfactura omnium quæ nobis forisfacere poterit se transferat, absque licentia nostra speciali: et omnes illos quos post proclamationem et inhibitionem hujusmodi extra regnum nostrum transeuntes inveneritis, una cum armaturis et aliis rebus suis arrestari, et salvo et secure custodiri faciatis, quousque aliud a nobis inde habueritis in mandatis: et de nominibus illorum quos sic arrestaveritis, ac de armaturis, et aliis rebus suis, et quæ, et cujusmodi fuerint; ac de toto facto vestro in hac parte, nos de tempore in tempus, in cancellaria nostra sub sigillis vestris, reddatis distincte et aperte certiores. Teste apud Westmon. 20 die Februarii per regem et consilium.

Eodem

Eodem modo mandatum singulis vicecomitibus per Angliam.
Aysc. Cat. 4584. Rym. vol. v.p. 353.

Rot. Claus. anno 4. E. 3. 1330. m. 4. in dorso.

Rex vicecomiti Kantiaë, &c. salutem.

Præcipimus tibi firmiter injungentes quod statim visis præsentibus, in singulis civitatibus, burgis, portibus maris, et aliis locis infra ballivam tuam tam infra libertates quam extra, ubi expediri videris; facias publice proclamari et ex parte nostra distincte inhiberi; ne quis comes, baro, miles, seu alius homo ad arma, regnum nostrum exeat, nec equos dextarios seu alios equos ad arma, seu armaturas extra idem regnum nostrum ducat; seu duci faciat, sine licentia nostra speciali. Et si quos post proclamationem et inhibitionem hujusmodi nostram inveneris contraria facere præsumentes tunc eos sine dilatione arrestari, et in prisonis nostris salvo custodiri facias donec aliud inde præceperimus; et nobis illorum nomina quos sic arrestaveris sub sigillo tuo distincte et aperte constare facias.

Teste rege apud Croydon, 24 die Februarii.

Per ipsum regem ac consilium.

Eodem modo mandatum est singulis vicecomitibus per Angliam. Aysc. Manusc. 4580. p. 479.

Rex dilecto et fidei suo Willhelmo de Clynton constabulario

L. l.

castri.

castri sui Dovoræ et custodi quinque portuum suorum, vel ejus locum tenenti, salutem.

Cum per singulos comitatus regni nostri publice fecerimus proclamari, et ex parte nostra firmiter inhiberi ; ne quis comes, baro, miles, seu alius homo ad arma, regnum nostrum exeat, nec equos dextarios seu alios equos ad arma, seu armaturas ; extra idem regnum nostrum ducat, seu duci faciat, sine licencia nostra speciali. Vobis mandamus quod aliquos comites, barones, milites, seu alios homines ad arma in portu Dovor, seu aliis portibus in balliva vestra ad partes externas transire ; seu equos dextarios, seu armaturas ad easdem partes ducere, nullatenus permittatis : et omnes illos quos inveneritis contraria facientes, sine dilatione arrestari, et in prisona nostra salvo custodiri faciatis, donec aliud inde duxerimus demandandum : et de nominibus illorum quos sic arrestari feceritis, nobis sub sigillo vestro distincte et aperte constare faciatis.

Teste ut supra, per ipsum regem et consilium. Ayse. Manusc. 4580. p. 481.

But in the nineteenth year of King Edward the Third, immediately previous to the fitting out the great armament of 1345, against Normandy and France ; this inhibition *ne exeant regno* was renewed and enforced with the greatest strictness and severity : limiting the departure of all persons whatever even
with

with the king's special licence, except merchants only with their merchandize, to the single port of Dover ; and extending the penalty of forfeiture and imprisonment, not merely to the partys offending by endeavouring to leave the kingdom, and to their horses, goods, armour, effects, &c. but equally to the master and mariners of the ship that should admit such persons on board, to their personal imprisonment and forfeiture of their goods and effects, and even to the loss of the ship itself forfeited to the king. This arbitrary stretch of prerogative was probably the occasion of repeated demands afterwards of the Commons in their petitions that every man should be at liberty to pass over the seas, paying the old accustomed duty of half a mark, as

Anno 21. E. 3. m. 29. the Commons petition that all men may freely pass well over the sea at their pleasure, paying their ancient custom of half a mark, which thing was ordained by the king's charter.

Answer. That subsidy was granted for a time yet enduring, within which time the king will advise with his Council what shall be best to be done therein for the good of his people. Harl. Manusc. 21, p. 36.

Rot. Claus. 19. E. 3, prs. 1. m. 20. D.

Quod nullus transeat mare nisi in portu Dover.

Rex vicecomiti Cantiaë, salutem.

Quibusdam certis de causis coram nobis et consilio nostro propositis, tibi præcipimus firmiter injungentes, quod statim visis præsentibus in locis iu balliva tua ubi expedire videris, publice proclamari et ex parte nostra firmiter inhiberi facias; ne quis cujuscunque status seu conditionis fuerit, extra regnum nostrum transiturus, exceptis mercatoribus cum merchandis suis, in alio portu infra regnum nostram Angliæ quam in portu Dovor, sub forisfactura omnium bonorum suorum, et incarceratione corporis sui ad voluntatem nostram, transeat sine mandato nostro speciali. Et si quos post proclamationem et inhibitionem hujusmodi inveneris aut sciveris, ad dictas partes, sine licentia nostra alibi quam ad dictum portum Dovor transituros, exceptis mercatoribus cum merchandis suis; tunc eos una cum navibus eos ducentibus, et cum equis, armis, harnesiis et aliis bonis et rebus suis, ac bonis et rebus magistrorum et marenariorum eos ducentium arrestari et salvo custodiri facias, quousque aliud a nobis inde habueris in mandatis, nos de nominibus eorum arrestatorum et cujusmodi naves, equos, arma, res, bona, et harnesia sic arrestaveris, in cancellaria nostra de tempore in tempus distincte certificans, et aperte. Et hoc sicut te ipsum indempnem servare volueris nullatenus omittas.

Teste

Teste rege apud Westmonasterium decimo die Martii.

Eodem modo mandatum est singulis vicecomitibus per Angliam. Ayfc. Catal. 4585. p. 355.

I shall proceed next to give a summary view of the laws respecting the staple, during the fourteenth century, so far as relate to the navy.

Anno 27. E. 3. 1353. One principal cause for summoning this parlement assigned by the Chancellor on the first day of opening was, that the staple should be removed from beyond the seas and appointed within the realm.

Anno 27. E. 3. m. 4. The statute fixing the staple of wooll, leather, woollfells and lead to be kept at the following places, namely, in England; at Newcastle upon Tyne, York, Nicole, (or Lincoln,) Carlisle, Norwich, Westminster, Canterbury, Chichester, Winchester, Exeter and Bristol; and

For Wales, at Carmarthen; and

For Ireland, at Dublin, Waterford, Cork, and Drogheda, to be weighed and sealed by the Mayor of the staple, and shipped at the following ports.

From York, at Hull; from Nicole or Lincoln, at St. But-
tolph

tolph, or Boston; from Norwich, at Great Yarmouth; from Westminster, at London; from Canterbury, at Sandwych; and from Winchester, at Southampton.

And from the ports themselves of Newcastle, Chichester, Exeter, Bristol, Carmarthen, Dublin, Waterford, Cork and Drogheda; paying half a mark (denisons) for the sack of wooll custom, and for three hundred woollfells the same; and one mark for a last of skins. Vide Harl. Manusc. No.

21. p. 52.

Anno 29. E. 3. m. 13. That the estatute of staple lately fixed to remain for ever in England, be observed in all points.

Resp. Il pleist a notre seigneur le roy que ainsi soit. Harl. Manusc. No. 14. p. 298.

Anno 50. E. 3. 1376. m. 62. The countys of Lincoln, Leiceſter, Nottingham and Derby prayeth, that the staple may be holden at Lincoln, as it was at first ordained, and not at St. Botto!ph's.

Answer. It shall continue at St. Buttolph's, at the king's pleasure. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 85.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 174. That no woollen yarn be carried out of the realm, but employed in drapeing, and exported in the cloth only.

Answer. No such yarn shall pass out of the realm on pain of forfeiture. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 94.

—— m. 178. The citizens of York desire, that where the Lord of Arcle and Cocham in Holland, hath stayd thirty-six farplars of their wooll, freighted from Kingston for Calais, to the value of 900l. supposing that the king oweth him money for his service in France; and will neither for the king's letters nor other means deliver their woolls: that therefore they may have license to stay the ships of the said Lord at Calais or in England, until they be paid and answered in the value.

Answer. Let it be declared to the great Council, and they shall have remedy according to reason. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 94.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 212. That the inhabitants of Calais may have liberty to purchase freely all kinds of merchandize and victuals in England, except wooll, woollfells, leather, tin, which have been confined by the staple to a particular company, while they were under the French allegiance, and under the reigns of Richard, John, and Henry, heretofore kings of England. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 96.

2d Parl. anno 5. R. 2. 1381. m. 67. The Lords and Commons grant to the king the subsidy of woolls and staple ware, as before, for four years, from the nativity of St. John the Baptist then ensueing; to be employed upon the wars and
voiage

voiage of the faid Duke of Lancafter. And (for) that the king will doe things according to the advice of his Council, by whose advice they grant (farther) that for ferving his credit and profit, he may for a time transport his ftaple ware to any other place besides Calais, any grant notwithstanding. Harl. Manufc. No. 21. p. 140.

Anno 5. Ri. 2di. 2d Parl. m. 14. The printed book touching the ftaple to be opened to all merchants whatever, agreeth with the record. Harl. Manufc. No. 21. p. 145.

Anno 9. Ri. 2di. 1385. m. 1. Sir Michael de la Poole, ~~now~~ created Earl of Suffolk, in opening the caufes of fummoning this parliament recommended firft, that the ftaple were planted within the realm; confidering Calais, Bruges and other towns beyond the feas grew very rich thereby, and good towns here much declined, and fo much for the common profit. Touching the king, he affirmed, that the custom and fubfidy of wooll yielded more to the king when the ftaple was kept in England, by one thoufand marks, per annum, than it did now being holden beyond the feas. Harl. Manufc. No. 21. p. 162.

Anno 9. Ri. 2di. m. 12. It is alfoe enacted, that the ftaple fhall be holden in England in fuch places as to the king and Council fhall be thought moft meet. Harl. Manufc. No. 21. p. 162.

Anno

Anno 14. R. 2. 1391. m. 6. It is enacted, that after the Feast of Epiphany next ensueing the staple shall be removed from Calais into England, in such places as are contained in the statute 27. E. 3.; the which statute shall be fully executed: and farther that every alien that bringeth merchandize into the realm, shall find sufficient security to buy and carry away commoditys of the realm to half the value of his said merchandize. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 179.

Anno 14. R. 2. m. 30. The king hath granted to the men of the isles of Guernsey, Jersey, Sark and Aurenay, that they for the space of eight years shall be free of all manner of tolls, exactions, and customs within the realm as his liege people and denizens are.

——— m. 31. The merchants of Kersies require that they may freely transport their said Kersies for the old custom of four pence. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 181.

Anno 15. R. 2. 1391. m. 7. It is enacted, that the staple of wooll shall be held in places within the realm, according to the 27th of Edward the Third, until the 24th of June next ensueing. And that every merchant, denizen or alien, may, during the same time, buy any kind of wools of what person soever, bringing to Calais one ounce of gold in bullion, for every sack of wooll: after which day the said staple shall

M m

be

be kept at such towns upon the sea coast, as the Council shall appoint. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 184.

Anno 20. R. 2. m. 19. 1396. It is enacted, that every merchant shall bring in to the Tower of London one ounce of gold of forrein coyn, for every sack of wooll and for every 240 of woollfells; and for every half last of skins; or else thirteen shillings and four pence over and above the due customs, and to put in surety therefore. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 197.

Anno 1. H. 4. 1399. m. 86. It is enacted that the golden or forrein coin alluded to 20. R. 2. m. 19. shall be brought to Calais until the next parliament. And,

——— m. 87. It is enacted, that the staple of wooll, woollfells, skins, lead and tin, shall only be at Calais; saving that the merchants of Jane, Venice, Catalonia, Arragon, and other countrys of the west, being in amity with the king, may discharge their merchandize at Hamton; and take in such staple wares; saving also the liberty to the men of Berwick upon Tweed for their woolls. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 219.

Acta Concilii, anno 9. H. 6. 1431. April 28, in the Starred Chamber.

John Reynewell Mayor of the staple of Calais said these words that follow. Present there my Lord Gloucester; the Cardinal; the Archbishops of Canterbury, and York Chancellor;

cellor; Bishops Ely, Bath, Norwich; the Lords Hungerford, Cromwell and Tiptoft. Copy.

My Lord of Gloucester and all my Lords,

Like it your Lordships to have in knowledge, how on Tuesday last past it liked my Lord the Chancellor to clepe afore him and other my Lords of the Council at that being present, certain persons of the staple at Calais and me also, for certaines matters that liked him to declare to them. And ye my Lord Chancellor, and other of my Lords of the King's Council at that time being present there, ye being informed of certain heavinesses and grievances hanging between certain persons of the company of the said staple and me; yt, liked your Lordships to give in commandment to Richard Wydeville, Robert Darcy, and Robert Whytingham, to hear the grievances afore-said between the said parties and me: and those heard, they by their discretions utterly to determine them and conclude them to (our) good and peace; if God would give them grace. The which persons fro thence hitherto, have so notably, so indifferently, and so truly laboured these matters; that all manner of heaviness and grievance been concluded, to perfect rest and peace between the said parties and me; beseeching you my Lord of Gloucester, that what suggestion that hath comen in tofore you by me, or any of mine, by bill, writing,

or any other mean, by the which in your conceit, any offence is done by the company of the said staple, or any of them to the king or his council ; that it like you to put it utterly out of your remembrance, in full discharge of the said company and each of them ; considering that neither it was, is, ne never shall be mine intent, that the said company ne none of them, shall neither take harm, hurt ne duresse, for any swiche suggestion made by me, or any of mine in any time present.

My Lord of Gloucester and all my Lords, as touching my desire of fee, costs and rewards for establishment of more profit, love and peace, it is fully accorded and assented by me under this form, that I John Reynwell have left my own desire in that, and fully put me in the discretion of the worthy men of the company of the said staple, having hope there and here. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Conc. 13. H. 6. Feb. 7. It is assented to and accorded to by the Lords of the King's Council, that for certain purveyances to be made to the Chancellor of France, or to his deputy at Calais, or at Bruges, in the month of May next comeing, of the sum of 5000 marks ; the Treasurer of England for the time being doe his power, to buy within the realm two hundred and twenty-two farplers of woolle, in any county there as he may soonest bargain with ; accounting for every farpler

farpler, one with another, two sacks of wooll, to the intent to be sold unto such sufficient merchants as well denisons as strangers, which can find sufficient surety to keep their payments within the said month at the places, and to the persons aforesaid. And that the said merchants, strangers or denisons have by this act full power and license, to ship or doe ship the said woolls at their freedom, and at the king's adventure and peril, to Caleys, Flanders, or to any other place; and from any of the said places freely to depart withouten any interruption or impeachment, notwithstanding any statute or ordinance made to the contrary here or there. And also that the said Tresorer of England have full power to moderate and release unto the said merchants half the subsidys and customs that shall grow unto the king by shipping the said woolls. And that every customer, by authority of this same act, have a clear discharge upon their accounts of the release and moderation of the dutys upon the woolles so shipped or to be shipped. Provided, &c. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam.

Anno 18. H. 6. 1439. m. 36. states that by statute 21. Ri. 2di, the staple was limited to abide at Calais, and that all manner of cloths, woolls, woollfells, hydes, lead, tin, cheese, butter, and honey exported, must be landed at Calais only and no were else. But that certain persons have purchased li-
censes

censes at divers times, to carry woolls and other merchandizes to other ports outright ; and the Chancellor of England hath estranged him oftentimes to grant licenses for cheefe and butter, to be had to any other port than Calais. Wherefore, considering how that cheefe and butter is a merchandize that may not well be kept and abide his merchant ; and will take great impairing by beasts of vermin and worms ; and is also tender and of so simple a price that it may not goodly bear the costs of staple ; therefore to be enacted, that cheefe and butter may be exported to any port without any license ; and that the great staple merchandizes should not be exported to any port except Calais, without any licence thereof to be granted but by the king himself.

Resp. Le roy le voet, purveu que il poet restreigner quand luy plerra. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 120.

Anno 27. H. 6. 1449. m. 19. states that the king Edward the Third in great deliberation ordained, that his whole staple of woolls, woollfells and other merchandize (skins, tin, and lead) to be at Calais for the weal of this his realm, and safeguard of the town ; and that by the great libertys and franchises given to the merchants thither repairing many years after, there came great revenues to him and his succeffors, viz. in some years of his reign 68,000l. and more, and so continued
many

many years ; at which time great riches came into this king dom ; and that by reason of the merchants of the said staple being at that time many in number, and of great riches ; good justice and law between party and party had, and by them well executed ; the said town of Calais well reparable, and the souldiers paid of their wages : how be it now that by divers and many licences given by letters patents, and by misusing of the said licences, buying of woolls and woollfells in other places than their licences containeth, shipping more number and weight ; and colouring by new-feigned names as *morling* and *shorling* ; and some persons that should by their licences have carried their woolls over the mountains, have sold them in Brabant and other places to such men, as were wont to buy their woolls at the staple of Calais ; and also by great taking out of woolls and woollfells not customed in divers parts of England and Wales, oftentimes by consent and means of untrue officers, as searchers and surveyors, which take no fee, but privy rewards, for doing the king wrong ; and by divers restraynts of merchandizes in Calais, as well by wars, as by souldiers for their wages ; and many other causes wherein the merchants of the said staple have not been cherished, nor of power to rejoyce their libertys and franchises of old times had and accustomed. Now it is so, that by the
means

means of aforesaid, and by the breaking of the whole staple, the customs and subsidys of the merchandize repairing to the aforesaid staple of Calais, pass not yearly 12,000l. which is but little in comparison to what they have been before time. The roialty of this land not enriched by their woolls, woollfells and other merchandize, as they were wont to be; the merchants greatly aneantized both in number and goods, and not in power, nor in comfort to buy their woolls, woollfells and other merchandize as they have done in old time; the soldiers of Calais and of the other marches there, not paid of their wages; the town of Calais for default of reparations, as well within the town-walls, towers and castles, as without the town, of dykes, jet d'eaus, keyes, scluses, banks and other reparations, which should be made for the defence of the town and the water outward like to be utterly destroyed (that God defend) without that remedy be hastily purveyed. Which premises considered like it our Sovereign Lord to ordain and establish, &c. the several provisions after recited in the premises, &c. Titus, E. 6. ad annum.

I shall next proceed to select a variety of miscellaneous petitions, acts, and regulations of the more remarkable respecting the navy in general; and more particularly the commercial

mercial trade of this kingdom during the 14th century, before I return to state the particulars of the great naval armament collected by king Edward the Third, for his expedition against Normandy and France, in the twentieth year of his reign, 1345.

Anno 2. H. 4. 1400. m. 22. The Commons pray the repeal of commissions granted to some cities and towns, to build certain barges and ballingers, without assent of parliament.

Answer. The king assents that such contracts should be annulled; but at the same time for the absolute necessity of having these vessels should the wars proceed, wishes to advise with the Lords farther upon this matter, and to communicate the result to the Commons. Harl. Manusc. 20. p. 72. and 21. p. 228.

Acta Concilii, anno 1. H. 6. 1422. March 3d. A commission was granted to William Sopur, John Foxholes Clerk, and Nicholas Banastre de Suth, to sell certain large ships, and such other vessels as to them should seem expedient, for the benefit of the king before the end of the next parlement; provided however that the said vessels shall not be sold to strangers, who are not either subjects, friends or allies to the king. And also it was agreed, that orders should be sent to the Mayors and bailiffs of the cities, towns and ports of London,

N n

Bristol,

Bristol, Hull, Lynn, Yarmouth and Plymouth; that they and every of them cause the premises to be proclaimed in the usual places, to the intent that all those who are desirous to become purchasers of the aforesaid vessels, may repair at the port of Southamton to the said William, John and Nicholas, appointed by the king to sell the aforesaid vessels there, before the end of the feast of Pentecost next ensueing. Vide Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 15.

Acta Concilii, anno 1. H. 6. Feb. 27th. The same day licence was granted to the merchants and burgeses of Newcastle upon Tyne, in case of the poverty of the mariners, as set forth and declared in a certain petition entered upon the file; to ship in the said port wooll, woollfells and skins to the amount of 1000 sacks of wooll, estimating the last of skins at two sacks of wooll, and 200 lesser skins or 140 woollfells at one sack of wooll (of the growth of Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmorland, and of the Bishoprick of Durham only, on pain of forfeiture;) to be transported for the space of one year to the ports of any kingdom, state or province whatever, if at peace and in amity with England, the statute of the staple to the contrary notwithstanding: and that the Earls of Northumberland, Westmorland, and the Lord Cromwell be appointed a committee to enquire into and regulate the shipping
of

of the said woolls, woollfells and skins. See Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Con. March 7th, 1. H. 6. at the Duke of Gloucester's house, in council, license was granted to the merchants of Florence to ship 300 sacks of wooll after payment of the king's customs in the port, and other sums due to the staple of Calais; on condition of disembarking the said woolls in Zealand, Brabant, or the territories belonging to the state of Florence, and no otherwhere, to be certified at their return under the letters testimonial and common seal of the city aforesaid: and to the observance of all and every the said stipulations, they entered into securitys before the Chancellor. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam.

Acta Conc. anno 1. H. 6. 1422. July 12. License was given to Ralph Earl of Westmoreland to ship five hundred sacks of wooll of the above four countys growth only, on pain of forfeiture, to be landed at the port of Heidelberg, in Zealand, and Bruges in Flanders, after paying subsidys, &c. as before the statutes of the staple notwithstanding. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

On the same day it was ordered that procuratorial powers should be made out in the name of the king, to the bishops of Lincoln and Chichester, and the prior of Sullan in Aquitain,

tain, about to goe over to demand the king's place and rights for his realm of France of the Pope and general council about to be held (at Basil). Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 14.

Acta Conc. anno 1. H. 6. March 2d. Granted to the Mayor, bailiffs and burgeses of Tenby in South Wales, and their successors, that they shall from Michaelmas next, for the term of twelve years complete, be free and discharged on account of a full agreement made with the port and city of Bristol) de omni kunagio, numagio, portagio, parmagio, et picagio. Id. ibid. p. 15.

Acta Con. anno 1. H. 6. April 26th, at Westminster. It was ordered that the Lords, the Duke of Exeter, the Bishop of London, the Earl Marshall, the Lords Willoughby and Walter Hungerford, and the other Lords and magnates, about to pass over into France in the service of the king, shall have all such letters of protections from our sovereign Lord the King, and all other royal letters that may be necessary or convenient to them, or either of them without any farther suit to the Lords of the Council. Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 18.

Acta Conc. anno 1. H. 6. May 13th, apud fratres prædicatores, London. Present, the Dukes of Gloucester and Exeter; the Archbishop of Canterbury; the Bishops of London, Winchester, Norwich and Worcester; the Earl of Warwick;

wick ; the Lords Cromwel, Tiptoft ; the Chancellor and the Treasurer.

Concordatum fuit that a writ be directed to the Lieutenant of the Tower of London to give up and deliver to Christopher Preston, Esq; fifty of the king's prisoners, whose names are specified on the file or roll given in ; to be held and possessed to the said Christopher in full discharge of the sum of 850*l.* being a debt due to him from the late king deceased, ut dicitur : by executing indentures between the said Lieutenant of the Tower, and the aforesaid Christopher, of the time and place of the delivery and receipt of the said fifty prisoners, and other necessary precautions ; and likewise that the said Christopher shall give security to the Lord Chancellor, of putting the said prisoners to ransome, at the appointment of the Lords, the Duke of Gloucester and the Bishop of London jointly or severally ; who shall engage to certify the Council herein. Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 21,

The same day was granted to Thomas Comberworth, Knt. for the custody of the Duke of Aurelian, a prisoner of the king's, from the first of May last, as long as the same Duke shall remain under his ward ; twenty shillings a day for his wardship and expences. Id. ibid. p. 22.

Acta Conc. anno 1. H. 6. May 21. The same day was
granted

granted to Robert Scot Lieutenant of the Tower of London, to have by the hands of the Tresurer 100l. for the custody of the king's prisoners in the Tower aforesaid, per viam profiti.

Acta Conc. anno 1. H. 6. July 3d. All the king's justices of both benches, and the Chief Baron of the Exchequer, who all by the order of the Lords of the Council, sitting in the star-chamber of the king at Westminster, took cognizance of the matter of dispute alledged by the merchants of the Hans Towns, and prosecuted by them with the Lords of the Council, viz. touching the payment of the subsidy of three shillings upon every ton of wine imported, due to the king; and entering into the Council-chamber in the presence of their Lordships there present, namely, the Duke of Gloucester; Archbishop of Canterbury; the Bishops of Winchester and Worcester; the Earl of Warwick; the Lords Fitzhugh and Cromwell; the Chancellor and the Tresurer. The judges aforesaid reported.

“ Quod ipsi audierunt tam pro parte regis quam ipsorum
 “ mercatorum de Hansa, proposita in dicta causa; et demum
 “ dixerunt quod videbatur eis, secundum sic dicta et propo-
 “ sita coram eis; quod dicti mercatores de Hansa tenentur
 “ solvere dictum subsidium trium solidorum de dolio, con-
 “ cessorum regi in ultimo parlamento suo apud Westmonaste-
 “ rium

“ rium tento, more extraneorum et non ut indigenæ, ut ipsi
 “ vendicant aliquibus allegationibus libertatum et franchifa-
 “ rum per eosdem propositis non obstantibus. Quæ omnia re-
 “ portata fuerunt in præsentia plurimorum dictorum merca-
 “ torum, coram dominis prædictis.” Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 25.

July 7, at Westminster, present as before, with Lord Cromwell and the greater part of the merchants of the Hans Towns residing in London. At their especial instance it was declared unto the said merchants by the Chancellor, in the name of all their Lordships, that with respect to the payment of the subsidy of three shillings per ton of wine, to be paid by them as alien merchants, by the special order of their Lordships to the collectors of that subsidy in every port of England, they shall be indulged until the Quindean of St. Michael next ensueing; on condition that they shall indemnify the said collectors, at that time to pay up the whole arrear of what is already due from them, and likewise what may moreover become due in the mean time, according to the last regulation, provided they doe not by that time produce better and stronger deeds and evidence of their claim of exemption, than they have hitherto done before the Lords of the Council, and the king's justices. And on the other hand, if within that time, they shall be able to produce stronger proofs and evidence; the Lords of the
 the

the Council promise to do them justice, after the Quindean of of St. Michael in remitting the surplus charge of that subsidy. Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 26.

The next is an order of Council in the king's name, in consequence of an appeal of John Burneaux, a Hans merchant of Dameas, against Nicolas Wooton, Alderman of the city of London, touching a certain composition made between the Mayor and Aldermen of London, and the Mayor and merchants of Dameas respectively; the appellant stating by petition, that in consideration of divers privileges and franchises to be held and enjoyed in the city of London, the aforesaid Mayor and merchants of Dameas should pay to the aforesaid Mayor and Aldermen of London fifty marks yearly; but that in case it should so happen, either from the chance of war, or the king's express command, that the agents of the merchants of Amiens should be debarred the liberty of residing here to superintend the concerns of their factory for a whole year, during the term granted; that then they shall be discharged of the payment of the aforesaid fifty marks for that year, and in proportion for a longer or shorter period of such discontinuance of residence here, under the circumstances above recited.

That it so happened, that Robert Cok, merchant of London,

don, became indebted to the aforesaid appellant John Burneaux, in the sum of 30l. for merchandize bought of him; and that Nicholas Wotton, an Alderman of the city of London, stopped the aforesaid debt of 30l. and delivered in the name of the city in part of payment of the aforesaid composition of fifty marks for the third year of the king Henry the Fourth, at which time the merchants of Dameas, through the breaking out of the war, were not permitted to abide or continue at all within the city of London, and yet notwithstanding the aforesaid Robert Cok, after the battle of Agincourt, was driven and compelled to pay into the city the aforesaid 30l. in part of the agreement above recited for the said fourth year of king Henry the Fourth against law, reason and conscience, and expressly against the letter and intention of the aforesaid composition. Praying their Lordships to take the aforesaid premises into consideration, *et envoyer par le dit Nicoll (Wotton) par repaier les dites xxx^s audit Robert (Cok) pur issint que votre dit suppliant ne perdra sa dite duee, ne soit moleste en contre reson et le tenour de dite composition, pour Dieu et en cœur de charite.*

Sur quel vuez et leuez la dite composition en presence du dit Nicol et plusieurs autres Aldermannes et Recorder du dite citee de Londres, come en presence du dit Johan Burneaux,

devant nous en le conseil avant dit ; par bonne et meure deliberation, et ainsi de notre conseil, accorder est et assentu par les dits mair et merchants du dite citee Dameas, a cause que ils en le temps avantdit en la dit ann quart fu le dit battail d'Agincourt, a cause de quel ne pourroient fair leur demoer ne venir a Londre avec leur merchandises, faront quittez de la dite ferme ; et que le dit Nicol repaieroit les dites trente livres au dit Robert, pris par le dit Nichol de le dit Robert, qui est accordant a sa petition. Et aussi le mair et merchants Dameas avantdite, ferront quittez pur tous jours de la dite ferme, en cas que par commandement du roy, ou par guerre, ils ne purront fair leur demoer deinz la dite citee de Londres, pur le dit temps que ils ne purront faire leur demoer avant dit.

En tesmoigne du quelle chose nous avons fait mettre notre prive sceal a ces premises.

Donne a notre palloys de Westminstre, le rome jour de Juyl l'an de notre regne primer. Cleopatra, F. 4. p. 25.

Anno 1. H. 4. 1400. m. 159. The Commons petition that the king may only have two tonnes of wine of every ship of wine comeing into any port (of England) in the name of Prise.

Answer. It shall be as heretofore. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 223.

Rot.

Rot. Parl. anno 8. E. 3. 1333. It is enacted, for that the staple was ordained for to endure at the king's pleasure, that the same staple should be revoked; and that all merchants strangers may freely buy any staple wares, paying the due custom. Harl. Manusc. 21. p. 5.

A contract for victuals for Edinburgh and Striveling castles and for Berwick castle, anno 13. E. 3. 1338.

William de Snoringe and John Attefenne, merchants of Lynne, and Robert de Baions and Henry le Smith, merchants of Barton on the Humber, have engaged to purvey 1800 quarters of wheat, 2500 quarters of malt, 2200 quarters of beans and peas, 1400 quarters of oats (et caveis) and deliver them at their own costs and charges at Berwick upon Tweed and at the port of Leith. The wheat and malt at nine shillings per quarter, and the beans, peas and oats at five shillings per quarter, before Midlent next enfueing; and to bring back a certificate of the delivery, from Monsieur Rokeby, Governor of the castles of Edinburgh and Striveling, for the one moiety, and from the Governor of Berwick castle for the other moiety, to be supplied in equal proportions by the four merchants.

To Berwick.	To Edinburgh and Striveling.
Wheat, - 1000 quarters	Wheat, - - 800 quarters
Malt, - - 1500 quarters	Malt, - - 1000 quarters
Beans and peas, 1000 quarters	Beans and peas, 400 quarters
Oats, - - 900 quarters	Oats, - - 600 quarters
Wine, - - 80 tons	Wine, - - 24 tons
Salt, - - 200 quarters	Harl. Manusc. 21. p. 57.
and 14. p. 12.	

Anno 14. E. 3. 1339. 2d Parliament in the same year, held the Wednesday after Thomas à Becket; the Saturday following the Lords and Commons granted to the king, as agreed in the two last parliaments, namely, the ninth of their corn, wooll and lamb, and many devices made for the due answering of the same. Thereupon came the Earl of Arundel and Sir William Trussel, with letters from the king under the Privy Seal, reporting his great victory over the enemy gained on St. John's day, in the water of Swine in the port there; and no less necessity to have indelaye paye of money, and also that the king's allyes of Flanders tarried about Tournay

may for the king, with an hundred thousand men, and that Sir Robert de Artoys tarried for him at St. Omer's with fifty thousand men. And in the end the king sheweth great causes of danger, and more of dishonour, without present aide; and requireth farther credit in the payment. After this certain Bishops, Lords and Knights, there named, doe appoint of their own credit, to spare the king 20,000 sacks of wooll; every sack to be sold five marks under the price made at Nottingham; so as the king should be answered for every sack of the best sort, six pounds; for others five, and for the worst four marks, over and above forty shillings custom for every sack, whereof present return should be made unto the king. Harl. Manusc. 21. p. 16.

———— m. 12. Provision is appointed to be made for the king, two parts at Sandwich, and the third at Southamton; namely, 2,000 quarters wheat, 500 quarters beans and peas, 500 quarters oats, 800 bacons, 200 tons of ale, and 40 weys of cheese to refresh the fleet.

———— m. 13. 4,400l. is assigned to the king's butler out of the ayde of Essex and Oxon. Id. ibid, p. 16.

Anno 14. E. 3. m. 19. Every sheriff by writ shall cause some certain merchants of every city or town within his baliwick,

wick, to appear before the council at a day (appointed) and proclaim that no person shall buy any wooll before the king be served, whereto all customers shall have an eye.

Henry Goldbeater and others take 1500 sacks of wooll within the county of York, to pay for every sack 4l. 10s. over and above 40 shillings custom in three weeks. Others engage at 4l. 13s. 4d. others at 4 marks per sack.

—— m. 23. Walter Lee Preist of Melton Mowbray, and Lynge Corbett, merchants of Barton upon Humber, take 500 sacks of Leicestershire wooll for eight marks the sack.

—— m. 24. Thomas Colley and two others take 400 sacks of Shropshire wooll at 6l. 6s. 8d. all over and above to pay 40 shillings custom for each sack.

—— m. 37. That 500 sacks of wooll in Gloucestershire be assigned to queen Philippa to pay her debts, &c. (in the king's absence). Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 17.

Anno 21. E. 3. m. 27. The merchants of cities and boroughs, and the commonalty of the land shewe, that the merchants are disturbed to buy and sell the commoditys of the land; as tin of Cornwall may now be bought of no merchants, but by one stranger Tydman of Lymburgh, who buyeth all and sendeth over the sea; and pray that no such merchandize

dize may be fold in grofs, but to the commonalty of merchants.

Answer. That is a profit belonging to the prince, and every Lord may make his profits of his own. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 36.

—— memb. 31. That the new custom lately fet, namely, upon every cloth carried forth by English merchants fourteen pence, and by strangers twenty-one pence; and upon every worsted cloth one penny, and of strangers one penny halfpenny, and upon every lint ten pence, and of strangers fifteen pence, may be taken away.

Answer. The king, prelats, countes and autres grantz will, that this custom shall stand; for it is as good reason that such a profit be taken of cloths wrought within the realm and carried forth, as of wooll carried out of the land rateable, the cloth as the sack. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 36.

The following Act of Council adjusts the mode of assessing the subsidy of twelve pence in the pound on all merchandize imported and exported, anno 12. H. 6. 1434. June 16th, in the Starred Chamber, present my Lords of Bedford, Gloucester, the Cardinal; the Archbishops Canterbury and York; the Bishops Ely and Lincoln; the Earls of Huntingdon, Northumberland,

thumberland, Suffolk'; the Lords Hungerford, Tiptoff; the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Privy Seal, in the matter of valuing merchandize going and coming into this land; of which the king ought to receive by his customers the subsidy, that is to wit, three shillings of the tonne, and twelve pence of the pound, like as it is contained in part of the grant made thereupon in the parlement. In which matter processe hath come out of the king's Exchequer against the merchants as well denizens as strangers; because they valued not their merchandize as well inward as outward, according to the value the best in this land, like as the law of this land requireth. After the great and busy suit made to the king against the said processe and the valuing that the king's customers have taken upon them in this case: after the Chancellor had asked the question of all the Lords what them thought best to be done in this matter; it was thought to them all, according in one, save the Treasurer, that of all manner of merchandize going out of this land, the customer let doe value it, after as it is worth betwixt merchant and merchant, and that the merchant pay his subsidy to the king after that value. And as touching all manner of merchandize coming into this land from beyond; it is thought expedient, that no manner of merchandize

dize be untrussed, ne unpacked by the merchants, ne their factors on pain of forfeiture thereof; but in the presence and by oversight of the customers. And that thought that it be valued by the said merchants oath, or his factors how much it coste beyond the sea there he bought it and thereafter he to pay his subsidy, and none otherwise. And that the king may grant this unto the merchants, in eschewing of many inconveniencys, if hym like of his grace, howbeit that some men hold hereupon, that the law of this land is the contrary.

And this done the Treasurer there being present required, that it be enacted of record of the devoir and dilligence that he hath done, as hym thought, for the king's great awayl in this matter. And the Lords forthwith, for many and great considerations, and eschewing of great noyse, losses, and of divers inconvenients likely to fall and ensue, desired also that it might be enacted, that they advise this and council the king more to grace than to rigor, for the good of him and his people. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 21. E. 3. m. 58. Whereas heretofore because divers merchants were slain and robbed on the sea by the king's enemyes of France, it was ordained by the king, peers and prelates, and by the assent of the said merchants, that all that would pass with woolls to the staple, should pay twelve pence

upon every sack for safe-conduct : and certain merchants undertook for the same and safely to conduct the merchants ; and yet have not nor will not perform that conduct, and yet take the said twelve pence on a sack ; whereby many merchants have lost their lives, woolls and other merchandize. That they who undertook this conduct may be made to come into this parlement, to make gree to the merchants, who by their default have lost their goods ; and to answer to the king that which they took of the merchants as is abovesaid.

Answer. Let persons and places be assigned for hearing plaints of all who will complain of the said merchants, to the end that right and reason may be done fully to the plaintiffs. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 40.

—— m. 38. That whereas it hath been ordained, that all men may freely pass over the seas with their woolls and other merchandize, certain merchants that have of the king the custom and subsidy for a certain sum yearly, by colour of a bargain or purchase which they have made of the king's woolls, will suffer no man to pass over woolls except they pay two marks for a sack of wooll above the custom and subsidy, to the great damage of the people and abasement of the price of woolls ; whereof they desire remedy, and that the merchants may answer in this parlement for such their outrage done to the people.

Answer.

Answer. Let the merchants be called into parlement and answer. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 37.

Anno 21. E. 3. m. 68. John Whetenham and Walter Dechariter, merchants, desire that whereas the Commons have complained against them by divers bills in parlement, namely, that they have done divers extortions and perdes to the king and Commons; forasmuch as they have employed their pains and diligences to serve the king, and have therein suffered many losses and mischiefs. That the king will command the said merchants to come before the council, to answer whatever shall be objected, and to declare their estate; so as other merchants hereafter may not doubt to deal with the king in chevances, nor no other business as occasion shall require. No answer entered in the roll. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 44.

Anno 21. E. 3. m. 34. That whereas the four great rivers of England, viz. Thames, Tees, Ooze, and Trent, were wont from antiquity to be open, and free for every ship to pass with merchandize; and now of late daily the said rivers are stopped, and turned aside, by doors, mills, piles and pales, erected by every Lord against his own land, so as ships cannot pass without danger: that justices may be assigned in every county, to enquire of this business, and to remove the oppression.

Answer. The king is pleased that such and so many commissions shall be granted as reasonably shall be needful ; and that every man shall be heard, that will complain for himself and the king. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 36.

Anno 28. E. 3. m. 53. It is enacted, that all the statutes, that all merchants coming into this realm with their merchandize, may sell the same to any person at his pleasure, and of the same to make exchange to buy woolls, paying the customs therefore ; are confirmed to continue.

Anno 28. E. 3. m. 55. It is enacted, that in any dispute at law between merchants, strangers and denizens, the jury of enquest shall be half foreigners and half denizens.

Anno 28. E. 3. 1354. m. 56. That the customers doe dispatch all such merchants coming into this realm with their wares and merchandize ; and that such merchants for the prices of their wares may be credited upon their letters and oaths.

Answer. It is enacted.

Anno 28. E. 3. m. 57. That some one of the King's Council may be appointed to be governor of such merchants strangers.

Answer. The Chancellor and Treasurer shall supply the same when they may attend, if not some learned Justice shall be appointed therefore. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 55.

Anno

Anno 1. H. 4. 1399. m. 126. It is enacted that it be enquired by whom any of the goods of the late king Richard are embezzled.

And m. 127. the same of the concealments of the customers, collectors, sheriffs and escheators. Harl. Manusc. 21. p. 221.

Anno 16. R. 2. 1392. m. 24. The Commons petition that some way may be found for the maintenance of the navy of the realm being utterly decayed.

Answer. There is sufficient remedy by statutes, which the king would to be observed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 190.

Anno 17. R. 2. m. 49. Sundry towns of the west parts pray remedy against the officers of the admiralty courts, for holding pleas of matters determinable at common law, (and that) the which may be revoked.

Answer. The Chancellor, by advice of the Justices, upon the hearing of the matter, shall remit such to the common law, and grant prohibition. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 194.

Anno 9. R. 2. 1385. m. 30. The Commons require that the patent lately made to the Constable of the Tower of London, where, by the colour of his office, he taketh custom of wines, oysters, muscles, fish, and other victuals coming to London by water, may be revoked.

Answer.

Answer. The petition of the Mayor and Commonalty of London is endorsed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 164.

Anno 13. R. 2. 1389. m. 47. It is enacted that the merchants artificers in worsteds in Norfolk may carry and sell their single worsteds to any place or person within the king's amity, notwithstanding any inhibition or liberty to the contrary.

—— m. 51. At the request of the Commons of the town of Gasford, it was enacted, that the Water-bailiffs of Calais should only take 4d. custom for every boat with victual from that town, and not six pence as they then took.

—— m. 55. Ejusdem anni. That no other custom than three pence be demanded of every kerfie passing out of the realm according to the old usage.

Answer. Let it be so until the next parlement, by which time the king will be better advised. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 178.

Anno 26. E. 3. 1352. m. 36. That no merchants be impeached of overplus of weight, after that the king's officers sworn have weighed the same.

Answer. The Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer shall weigh every man's complaint. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 51.

Anno

Anno 21. E. 3. m. 61. Whereas the king hath granted to certain persons the office of gauging the wines in the Dutchy of Guien, taking for the fee of gauging one penny sterling per ton, or the value thereof in other money; and they who ought to use the office of gauging these wines refuse to gauge any tonnell of wine, whereby the tonnell doth not bear his right measure; so as Lords and others doe lose of that which they ought to have the fifth or sixth part of every ton. That therefore the king and his council will give his commandment to the governors of the said dutchy, that no tonnell of what part soever it be within franchise or without, be shipped over sea before it be gauged by the virge, according to the standard of England, and the defect marked in the head of the tonnell; upon pain, to forfeit the said wine to the king, and also that the said gauger lose his office, if he doe not that which hereto appertaineth.

Answer. Let the office of gauger be performed par deca (on this side the water) upon the payne ordained, and that will work the effect through the whole business. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 40.

Anno 25. E. 3. m. 21. That the payment of merchants for the wafting of their goods may cease.

Answer. The king will be advised.

Note

Note marginal in the manuscript.

N. B. These payments in short time grew to be customs, called tonnage and poundage. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 48.

—— m. 28. It is enacted that the statute of Westminster made against the destruction of salmons, may be kept, and that all mills set upon rivers be thrown down.

Anno 37. E. 3. 1363. m. 7. On Wednesday next after commandment was given, that no man should transport woollen cloths, butter, cheefe, sheep, malt or beer, but that the merchants of Almaine might carry worsteds and other freighted cloths, and that merchants of Gascoigne might carry woollen cloths to the value of the wines brought in. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 60.

Anno 36. Ed. 3. m. 13. That remedy may be had against merchants, hostlers, regrators, and forestallers of wares, fish, wines and corn.

Answer. The ordinance for fish sold at Blakeney shall be kept, for the execution whereof William de Whittingham and John de Burney.

—— m. 17. Remedy to be had against wears, and such other engines upon rivers, to the annoyance of boats.

Answer. The statutes heretofore made shall be kept. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 61.

Anno

Anno 45. E. 3. 1371. m. 32. They affirm the decay of the navy to arise by three causes.

1st, For that fundry mens shippes are staid by the king long before they serve, whereby their owners are driven at their charges, to find their mariners to their undoing.

2d, For that merchants the nourishers of the navy, are often restrained their shipping, whereby mariners are driven to seek other trades and livings.

3d, For that the Masters of king's ships, doe take up Masters of other shippes as good as themselves are, whereby the most of those ships doe lie still, and the mariners so enforced to seek new livings; whereof they prayen remedy.

Answer. The king will provide remedy. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 72.

N. B. In a similar petition the next year, m. 20. anno 46. E. 3. it is stated, that such shippes have often been arrested a quarter of a year or more before they pass out of the ports, without wages of mariners during that time, or reward to the Masters of the ships per appareillements of the same. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 75.

—— m. 39. anno 45. E. 3. That such merchants as plead the king's pardon for their goods not customed, may have the same allowed.

Answer. The grieved, upon complaint shall be heard.
Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 73.

Anno 46. E. 3. 1372. m. 25. The Commons of the countys of Somerset and Wiltshire pray, that Gorfes des Pierres et Pales in the river of Severone may be pulled down, that thrayes and boats may pass as heretofore, between the town of Bristow and Bathe.

Answer. Let him pursue it that is grieved, and right shall be done according to the form of the statute in this case ordained. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 76.

Anno 46. E. 3. m. 48. That the statute may be repealed whereby it is ordained, that no English merchant shall pass over into Gascogny to buy wines there, except he find surety to buy at the least 100 tons, on pain of forfeiture of all the wines which he shall so buy.

Answer. The statute shall stand in force, and if any man find himself grieved thereby let him sue to the king for grace. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 78.

Anno 47. E. 3. m. 28. That masters of ships may be paid their wages of them and the mariners, from the day they were appointed to serve the king.

Answer. Taking of ships shall not be but for necessity, and payment shall be reasonable as heretofore.

—— m. 29. Those masters of ships require allowance for the tackling of their ships now in the king's service.

Answer. Such allowance hath not been heretofore made. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 81.

Anno 51. E. 3. 1477. m. 56. That for the saving of salmon and others of the fryes of fish in the Thames almost destroyed by certain engines, as the king himself hath often found; that therefore all trounkes between London and the sea may be withdrawn; and that no salmon be taken between Gravesend and Henley upon Thames in kyper time, viz. between the Invention of the Crofs and the Epiphany; and that no nets be laid in the Thames unless they be of large mesh of assize, which if granted, as good a salmon will in two or three years be to be bought for two shillings, as now costs ten shillings.

Answer. The statute therefore made shall be kept and commissions for the enquiry of the same.

—— m. 57. That the weares upon the river called Brainte in the county of Middlesex, parcell of the river of Thames, may be taken away.

Answer. The estatute therefore made shall be executed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 84.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 76. That the charter made to the men of

Yarmouth, that none should in the time of their fishing buy any herrings within seven miles of the same town, may be repealed; so as men may openly buy and sell.

Answer. The king granteth in respect of the new grant abovementioned, saving to the town all other their libertys with this *Licet Bill pur Harang de ernesmouth, &c.* Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 86.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 134. The watermen of London complain of leaving of locks, stanks and wears upon the river of Thames, and namely of a lock called Hambledon lock; and for that there is custom demanded of them passing the bridges of Staines, Windsor, Maidenhead, and other locks against their custom.

Answer. As for the locks and kiddles, the statute made the 47th. Ed. 3. shall be executed; and for exacting money of them at the bridges aforeaid or elsewhere against their franchises, they shall make their suit in the chancery, and have their writs grounded on their libertys to stay such taking. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 90.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 142. The Commons of Essex and Suffolk pray, that certain cloths made there or elsewhere called Cogge ware and Kerfies, be not within the compass of the statute of cloths, anno 47. E. 3. which enacts, that all cloths

*Cogge, a ship, Kogge. German, vide also Spelman in voce Cogones. of many Coggs and ships were taken" Chron M.S. an. 15. Edw³ 3^d
ogge boat. Cock boat. Coggeson, Cockswain, Coggle stone. Ballast. Coggle a fishing
vat, used in Yorksh. commonly Cobble. Cockle bread, sea biscuit. Cockle a
certificate of payment of naval dues.*

*Hist. of Isle of Tench. mentions a traditional rhyme, concerning
a bell in Mayate Church "John Dandelyon with his great dog
brought over this Bell on a mill cog."*

of colour to be vendible, should be made to the length of twenty six ells and five quarters broad at least; and the freight or narrow cloths in proportion.

Answer. The king willeth that they have such words, whereby it may be declared that the freight ware called Cogges ware and kerfies, be not within the statute 47. E. 3. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 91.

—— m. 143. The Mayor, Aldermen and Commons of the city of London pray, that they may enjoy all their libertys, and that no stranger do keep house, or be a broker or sell merchandize by retail.

Answer. The king hath granted thereto conditionally, that the said city be well governed, saving to the merchants of the Hans d'Alemaigne their libertys. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 91.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 156. That no man upon pain of loss of all that he hath, doe not carry forth out of the realm corn, except for the provision of Calais.

Answer. The liege people shall be free to carry where them best liketh for their most profit, except in times of prohibition by the continual council. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 92.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 160. They require, that remedy may
be

be had against certain Lombards, who falsely make themselves to be of the company of Alkertines or of Stroze, and have thereby bought woolls upon credit of Englishmen, some to the value of 30,000l. others of 20,000l. and then have left the kingdom, to the great undoing of divers Englishmen as Thomas Blanchard, Nicholas and John lately did.

Answer. It is before the great council. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 93.

Anno 50. E. 3. m. 180. The Commons of Devonshire pray, that they may be paid for victuals taken of them by the Duke of Bretagne, while he lay there long time for passage; and that from henceforth no protection be granted to any passing over, to take any victuals other than for present pay.

Answer. For the time past let the offenders pay and answer, and for the time to come the king will provide. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 94.

Anno 51. E. 3. m. 67. The countys of Leicester, Nottingham and Bedford, complain of the erection of three mills on the high stream of the river of St. Ives; whereby neither ships nor boats can pass to the great damage of 200l. per annum, to the towns of Bukden, Gormister, Brampton, Hemmiford, and Huntingdon.

Answer.

Answer. Let the statutes in such cases provided be executed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 103.

Anno 51. E. 3. m. 72. Divers countys adjoining upon the river Severne doe desire remedy for that the course of the same river, between Worcester and Bristol is so straitened, that the surrounding country is suddenly laid under water, that the ships cannot pass; and numbers, men, women and children often drowned in their beds.

Answer. Let certain Lords and others be appointed to hear and determine the matter.

Anno 51. E. 3. m. 73. That coarse woollen cloths, called frize, which were wove in Ireland, or England from Irish yarn, inferior in length, breadth and texture to staple cloth, may be discharged from subsidys and alnage.

Answer. Granted. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 105.

Anno 2. R. 2. 1377. m. 64. The Commons of the county of Kent pray, that remedy may be had for the better keeping of the sea coasts, so as the nobles having great part of the same share, may contribute thereunto.

Answer. The king, by advice of his council, will provide a remedy. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 126.

Anno 2. R. 2. m. 72. The Commons of the Isle of Wight pray remedy, for that most of the inhabitants through loss of enemys and payments, have forsaken the same isle.

Answer.

Answer. The king will do his best.

Anno 2. R. 2. m. 80. A statute confirming the charters and libertys of Great Yarmouth in Norfolk. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 126.

Anno 2. R. 2. 1378. 2d Parl. m. 31. That all customers and controllers of England may yearly be removed.

Answer. The king by advice herein will do his pleasure. Harl. Manusc. No 21. p. 119.

Anno 2. R. 2. m. 36. That remedy may be had, forasmuch as by the entercommuning with Scotland, the most of the wooll of the shires of York, Durham, Westmorland, Cumberland and Northumberland, are transported into Scotland, without any custom paid.

Answer. The king by his Council will provide therefore. Id. ibid.

Anno 2. R. 2. m. 54. It is enacted, to endure unto the next parlement, that all merchants which shall bring in any cloth of gold, kenerchiefs, pearls, jewells or furrs; and all merchants which shall transport staple ware, shall find surety to the Tower, to the value of twelve shillings in bullion, for every twenty shillings of such their merchandize so brought in or transported. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 120.

Anno 3. Ri. 2di. 1380. m. 35. That the English merchants

chants may be answered of the Scotts goods remaining within the realm, for such their goods taken in Scotland.

Answer. The king will doe what may be done, from time to time. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 130.

Anno 3. R. 2. m. 44. The Irishmen also require, that the Portugese may freely come thither, and traffick with them ; and that they may freely pass to Portugal and doe the like.

Answer. The king will be advised. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 131.

Anno 4. R. 2. 1380. m. 39. The countys of Norfolk and Suffolk, and other countys pray, the revocation of the charter of Great Yarmouth, lately made for the annexing of Kirkeley road to the same haven of Yarmouth ; and that no man should buy herrings within seven miles of that port.

Answer. The commission lately certified into the chancery by the earl of Suffolk shall be revised and examined ; for that the same charter was granted thereupon that the king may doe the best ; in the mean time Yarmouth shall be warned by a writ duely to use their libertys. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 133.

Anno 5. Ri. 2di. m. 89. It is enacted, that the charter made to Great Yarmouth, touching any new grant, namely, that no man should buy or sell herrings within seven miles of

the same, and that the road called Kinkle road in Suffolk, being six miles from the said town of Yarmouth, shall be considered as parcell of the haven of Great Yarmouth, shall be repealed, saving their old libertys. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 143.

Anno 10. Ri. 2di. 1386. m. 23. An act to confirm all the liberties of Great Yarmouth, non obstante all repeals, provided all strangers may have free liberty to buy, sell and carry away during the fair. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 168.

Anno 4. R. 2. 1380. m. 41. The Commons pray that the bounds between the ports of Holland and Kesteven, viz. between the waters of Welonde, and the water of Witham may be by commission founded and newly made.

Answer. It pleaseth the king, if no contrary cause can be shewed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 133.

Anno 11. R. 2. 1388. m. 41. It is enacted, that no controller or weigher in any of the ports within the realm doe enjoy their said offices but during their good behaviour at the king's pleasure. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 171.

Anno 13. Ri. 2di. 1390. m. 52. That every constable may have weighing of woolls, as is there prescribed.

Answer. The king granteth thereto, but for certain considerations, the execution has been suspended for farther deliberation. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 178.

Anno

Anno 14. R. 2. 1391. m. 34. That remedy may be had against milnes, stanks, kyddles and such like engines and devices levied upon the Thames.

Answer. The statutes therefore made shall be observed.

Anno 14. R. 2. m. 37. They require remedy against the outrageous taking of wages of master and mariner.

Answer. The admiral shall appoint them to take reasonable wages; or punish them. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 181.

Anno 16. R. 2. 1392. m. 24. That some way may be found for the maintenance of the navy of the realm, being utterly decayed.

Answer. There is sufficient remedy by statutes, which the king would to be observed. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 190.

Anno 16. R. 2. m. 29. That all such as bring prises of wine into the realm, doe only pay in ports twenty pence for every ton, and ten pence for every pipe.

Answer. They shall pay two shillings per ton, or else as they have done. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 291.

Anno 17. Ri. 2di. 1394. m. 34. That the vent and sale of tin may be at Lestwithiel in Cornwall, and not at Calais.

Answer. That the vent shall continue at Calays; notwithstanding may grant licenses to merchants to carry the same tyn to what parts they will, Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 194.

Anno 17. R. 2. 1394. Sundry countys of the west pray that they have may carriage of their woolls into Normandy, and that the Normans may discharge their wares at Southampton.

Answer. Let them repair to Calais as is appointed.

Anno 18. R. 2. 1395. m. 9. That remedy may be had against the men of Bristol, for claiming custom of wines discharged at Chepstow, which ought to be free.

Answer. As it hath been (so let it be).

Anno 21. R. 2. 1398. m. 73. The office of Marshall was committed to the Duke of Surrey, and the office of Admiral to the Marquis of Dorset, with this declaration, that the king was contented that the same should be known to the estates, albeit the same was freely in him to dispose, and nothing appertaining to the parliament. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 204.

Anno 21. R. 2. m. 80. The merchants pray to have the act passed 20. R. 2. m. 19. repealed, considering that the Duke of Burgundy had enacted, that no man should carry forth any bullion out of the said country of Flanders.

Answer. The king will write to the Duke. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 205.

N. B. This prohibition probably was the cause that in the
par-

parlement, 1. H. 4. m. 87. the staple was removed to Calais. Vide above among the regulations of the staple.

Anno 2. H. 4. 1401. m. 17. The Commons pray the king to repeal all annuities granted by letters patent for life, upon the subsidies of wools. To which the king grants as just and reasonable.

Anno 2. H. 4. m. 75. The Commons pray, that the statute made in the last reign to restrain the jurisdiction and powers of the admiralty courts be observed sub pœna 20l. to the king and party.

Answer. Granted, and moreover if complaint be prosecuted to conviction, the king gives up his moiety of the penalty too, to the party suing. See Harl. Manusc. No. 20. p. 101. and No. 21. p. 232.

Anno 2. H. 4. 1401. m. 100. The countys of Shropshire, Stafford and Hereford, complain of Bristol, Chepstow, Gloucester, Worcester, &c. for imposing and levying taxes for their victuals brought there upon the river Severn, against the old custom.

Answer. The king forbiddeth all extortion to be there used. Vide Harl. Manusc. No. 20. p. 113. and No. 21. p. 233.

Anno 2. H. 4. m. 108. That the jurisdiction of the Constable

stable of Dover Castle be certainly limited, so as they hold pleas of no matters done out of the said castle, or the lands belonging thereto.

Answer. The said castle shall enjoy all their libertys duely used. Harl. Manusc. No. 20. p. 113. and No. 21. p. 233.

Anno 4. R. 2. 1383. m. 51. That the statutes touching wines may more particularly expresse the gauging of all kinds of wine.

Answer. The king will have the statutes to be viewed according to the demand. Harl. Manusc. No. 21. p. 135.

Acta Concilii, anno 5. H. 6. 1428. Jan. 26th, at Westminster, it was agreed and assented to, that a warrant be made out to the Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Exchequer to pay the passage of the Duke of Bedford and his family into France; in as much as they are not *ad vadium regis*, at the same rate with the others who pass over in the retinue of the aforesaid Duke *ad vadium regis*. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 5. H. 6. 1428. Jan. 27. The Lord Hungerford, Captain Governor of the castle and town of Cherburgh, declared in council, that he had received certain intelligence that the enemys and rebels of the king in France and Brittainy, had formed a design of surreptitiously seizing by surprize the aforesaid castle and town out of the hands of the English;

English; by the treason of the burgesſes, inhabitants and other ſecret preparations made at ſea, and an armed force clandeſtinely aſſembling : and petitioned the Council for leave to repair thither with all poſſible expedition, for the ſafeguard and defence of the caſtle and town aforeſaid. But if their Lordſhips ſhould reſuſe this, he inſiſted that he ought to ſtand excuſed and totally free from all imputation of blame, in caſe any miſfortune ſhould happen to the aforeſaid town and caſtle, (which God forbid) ſeeing that he himſelf was ready and earneſtly importunate for their leave, to paſs over immediately for its ſafeguard and defence. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 5. H. 6. m. 8. at Canterbury. Letters patent to the Biſhop of Wincheſter, with licence to him to ſhip, carry, diſembark and ſell 800 ſacks of wooll on the banks of the Seine, or in the port of Cherburgh, or to Caen in Normandy; and in caſe any part of the wooll ſhall be damaged or loſt by the ſtorms at ſea, or captured by the enemy; then to replace, ſhip, carry and ſell as before, as many more ſacks of wooll, free of cuſtom or ſubſidy, as ſhall be ſo loſt or taken as aforeſaid. Provided however, that the ſaid Biſhop of Wincheſter ſhall previously at the port, where the ſaid 800 ſacks of wooll are ſhipped, pay to the king and diſcharge fully all cuſtoms, ſubſidys and ſtaple dutys, to which ſuch woolls are liable. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta

Acta Conc. anno 4. H. 6. 1426. May 14. at Leicester, assented to and agreed by the Lords of the Council hereafter named, that by the authority of the statute aforesaid, the Chancellor, Treasurer and Keeper of the Privy Seal for the time being, have the power of granting letters of safe-conduct and safe-guard to any merchants, alien or denizons, subjects of our Lord the king; and likewise to any prisoners, or hostages whatever, residing within the realm of England; and to their servants and others in their retinue, to whatever number and to continue in force for whatever time; upon their taking of such proper securitys in chancery, as to their wisdom and discretion shall seem expedient: provided the usual provisional clauses are inserted within; and that the aforesaid Keeper of the Privy Seal, under the instructions agreed to by the joint assent of the three, with regard to the manner and form of such respective letters of safe-conduct or safe-guard; shall proceed to execute the necessary warrants accordingly, under the Privy Seal, addressed to the Chancellor of England, in the usual form. See Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Concilii, anno 10. H. 6. 1432. June 6, at Westminster. Agreed that the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer, and Keeper of the Privy Seal, should have power to grant, as many safe-conducts to and for the servants of prisoners,

foners, and hostages of the king, and to the prisoners of any Lords, or other persons of the kingdom of England ; in whatever form and number, and to continue in force for whatever time shall appear fitting in their discretions. And that letters under the Great seal be made out accordingly. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Conc. 5. H. 6. 1427. May 30, at Westminster. It was agreed, that Stephen Marceel and John Marceel, Masters of the King's Mint at Roen shall be at liberty to ship and carry for the king's works and to refine the money there, fifty foders of lead, they first paying the subsidys to the king and other due and accustomed payments ; and this without their being obliged to carry the said lead to the staple at Calais. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

On the same day it was agreed that certain liegemen of the king who were desirous of transporting themselves, and entering into the service of the king of Denmark to defend his kingdom against certain enemys not confederates nor in alliance with the king of England ; should have free liberty to doe this without interruption or molestation from the king, his heirs or assigns ; and that a warrant should pass the Privy Seal addressed to the Chancellor, to make out letters patents under

the Great Seal for the ships and captains that may be necessary. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 5. H. 6. July 8th. Agreed that the Lord Treasurer should be empowered to give farther time at his discretion to any alien merchants, for payment of the customs on their giving a proper security, such time not to exceed fix months; and that they shall not be obliged to immediate payment to the king's loss, and their own detriment. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 6. H. 6. 1428. July 10. Letters patent under the Great Seal, giving full protection and liberty of trading to the merchants of Flanders, their factors, servants, sailors, &c. throughout England and the dominions of the king; and the same to the merchants of Holland and Zealand. See both at length, Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 7. H. 6. 1428. November 16, at Westminster, ordering new regulations respecting cheque books under the Great Seal, being provided at the Exchequer for every port in England, &c. and their duplicates to be sent down to the collectors and customers in each port respectively, appointed to receive the king's subsidies; in which all the merchants are to enter their names, and the quantity and value of the merchandise

dize they enter, whether imports or exports, numerically arranged, under pain of forfeiture of the goods and stopping of the ship, if not duly entered, as in the form prescribed. See Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Conc. anno 7. H. 6. 1429. Feb. 26. Ordered letters of safe-conduct to be made out, for one Bishop, one Knight, one Doctor, and one Secretary from Castile, Embassadors from the King there; and for forty persons in their retinue, their horses, equipage and effects, &c. to be in force until the feast of All Saints next ensueing. Also like letters to ——— Sampson, Esq; and eight persons in his retinue, &c. as before. See Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Concil. anno 8. H. 6. 1430. April 18. at Canterbury. Ordered that the Keeper of the Privy Seal make out protections to all Councillors and principal officers of the king, about to pass over in his retinue into France; as also for their respective servants, officers and domesticks, as passing over in the service of the king; notwithstanding they have not indented with the king for themselves or their servants, &c. Cleopatra, F. 4. ad datam.

Acta Conc. anno 10. H. 6. 1432. Nov. 28. Ordered the following warrants to be made out under the seal, &c.

1st, For arresting the ships at Winchelsea and soldiers and mariners, for the safe-conduct of the money hereafter mentioned.

2d, Henry, &c. To the Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Exchequer, We with and by the advice and assent of our Council, will and command you to cause to be paid and delivered to our trusty and well-beloved William Leventhorpe and William Burgh, tellers (counters) in the receipt of our Exchequer, ten thousand marks; for them to carry and bring over by land and by sea, to us in our realme of France, at our risk and hazard, for the wages and rewards of our retinue now here with us in our realme of France aforesaid; and to deliver them into the hands of our Treasurer of the wars for the purposes aforesaid.

Item, a like warrant to pay to the aforesaid Leventhorp and Burgh four hundred marks for that service. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Concil. anno 10. H. 6. June 24. at Westminster. Granted that letters patent be made out in due forme, to empower John Duke of Bedford to carry and lead out of this kingdom into the kingdom of France gold, silver and jewels, in ingot or in plate without restraint as occasion may require; during the time the said Duke shall continue to be Governor
and

and Regent of the aforesaid kingdom of France, any statute or ordinance heretofore made to the contrary notwithstanding. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Concil. 11. H. 6. 1433. Feb. 11. In the assignments made by the Lords of the Council upon the customs and subsidies of the port of Southamton to the feoffees of part of the possessions of the Dutchy of Lancaster under the will of the late king Henry the Fifth, for the payment and discharge of the several sums of 3028l. and also of the farther sum of 3000l. by them then newly advanced and loaned for the ease of the king's necessities, out of the moneys accruing from the said trust: it is stipulated by the Lords of the Council, that the feoffees aforesaid shall appoint a customer, and freely have all the receipts of that port, unto the time that both the first money 3028l. and the 3000l. which they lend now unto the king, be fully arreared and paid of the customs and subsidies of that port: and that the port shall not be charged with any other assignments until this be fully performed and contented. And moreover, the Duke of Gloucester and the other Lords of the Council farther promitte, not to vary but these assignments abovesaid shall stand in force; ne as far forth as in them is, they shall never assent to the contrary thereof.

Item,

Item, my said Lord of Gloucester, have promitted, that neither privy ne apart, they shall not counsell ne desire no manner ships with merchandizes, denizons ne aliens ; to withdraw them from that port, where-through the payments abovefaid might be delayed or tarried ; ne to stir ne procure no manner merchant to withdraw him thence, in letting and delaying the assignments aforefaid. And farther promitted, that upon these articles abovefaid letters of Privy Seal shall be made and delivered to the Chancellor of England to deliver letters patents, &c. to the feoffees aforefaid. See Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Conc. 11. H. 6. Feb. 18. It was accorded by the Lords of the King's Council, that (with respect to) all town merchants, strangers, such as by the statute be bounden to bring a certain sum for their merchandizes to the bullion in the Tower of London : the Treasurer of England have power to grant them for the king's avayl, such days of respite, of bringing in their said sums to the bullion, as betwixt him and them, shall mowe be accorded taking of them therefore sufficient security. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Concil. 11. H. 6. 1433. Feb. 20.—The same day it was agreed that the Archbishop of York, who is setting out

as

as an embassador from the king, first to the sovereign Pontiff and afterwards to the general Council ; have licence by patent under the Great Seal, to carry and transport with him into forreign parts in gold and silver coin to the amount of 2000l. and in plate or mass to the amount of 500 marks ; any statute or ordinance to the contrary notwithstanding. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Acta Concil. 11. H. 6. August 12. Agreed that separate letters of privy Seal be made out to the following tenour.

To the customers of the woolles subsidys in the city and port of London, and to the Comptroller of the same.

To the customers of three shillings per ton wine in the port of London, and to the Comptroller of the same.

To the customers of the lesser customs in the port of London, and to the Comptroller of the same.

To the collectors of the customs and subsidys in the port of Hull, and to the Comptroller of the same.

Depar le Roy.

Dearly and well-beloved, we will by the advice and assent of our Council, that all other things left and excuses set aside, you and every of you attend personally before the Treasurer and Barons of our Exchequer, at our palace of Westminster, on the Lendemain of St. Michael coming, without fail ; and
bringing

bringing then with you, the books, rolls, tallies, moneys, and all other matters of account, to your said offices severally belonging, as well appertaining to your charge as discharge, in your necessary accounts belonging to your offices respectively. And moreover, we will by and with the advice and assent aforesaid, and command you that neither you the aforesaid customers, nor either of you, make not any payment or payments to any person or persons, on tallies, writts, or any other warrants whatsoever unto you addressed, or that may be addressed hereafter, for any sums of money or obligations by you received or to be received, untill the l'endemain de St. Michael aforesaid, or until you shall receive an expresse order to the contrary, from our Treasurer aforesaid. And of this, under the penalty of 100 marks, fail ye not in any way or manner whatever.

Similar letters, with the one to Hull, ordered to the collectors of the customs and subsidys, in the ports of Boston, Ipswich, Lynn, Yarmouth, Sandwych, Hamton, Chichester, Melcombe and Poole, Newcastle, Bristol, Plymouth, and Fowey, Exeter, Dartemouth, and Briggewater. Cleopatra, F. 4. at datam.

Acta Concil. anno 12. H. 6. 1433. December 16. Assented and accorded to that a warrant, &c. be made to pay to Maister John Ryval, the King's Secretary, twenty-five marks for the
Exchange

Exchange of 500 marks, to be transmitted en monoie blanc to the Bishop of Tirwan, Chancellor of France, according to the king's promise made thereto.

Ordered a warrant that of the sum of 4300 marks, which the king has to pay with all good haste, in part of 8000 marks engaged for to the Bishop of Tirwan, Chancellor of France, according to his promise, facent faire exchange, viz. with Richard Leylond, Treasurer of the Household of the Duke of Bedford, in the sum of 3000 marks, to be delivered in all convenient speed to the aforesaid Bishop of Tirwan at Roan, and with

Gyles de Ferrars, Secretary to the Duke of Bedford, in the sum of eight hundred marks, to be delivered, &c. as before, and with Maister John Rival, the King's Secretary, in the sum of five hundred marks, to be delivered, &c. as before.

The same day ordered a warrant, &c. to the Treasurer and Chamberlains, &c. at sight to send, at the king's risque and charge, to the Bishop of Tirwan at Roan, the sum of 3700 marks (the remainder of the 8000 engaged for) on receiving sufficient acquittances for their discharge on this behalf.

N. B. This is the first instance I recollect of the government's adopting this mode of making remittances out of the kingdom to foreign parts, by bills of exchange, as in the three

first instances ; instead of impressing ships, soldiers and mariners, for the safe-conduct of the money to be remitted, as in the instance before recited, p. 316. The remaining moiety of 3700 marks, from the context appears to me to have been remitted in the old accustomed method. Cleopatra, F. 4. at the date.

Anno 12. H. 6. 1434. April 14. at Westminster, ordered a warrant, &c. to deliver to John Merston, keeper of the jewells of our Lord the King, one hundred pounds sterling ; for him to order and provide six collars of gold, twenty-four collars of silver gilt, and other collars of plain silver to the amount in the whole of the said 100l. and all the above collars to be sent to the Roman Emperor as a present from the king.

The same day a warrant was ordered to the aforesaid John Merston, to deliver to the Treasurer of England the aforementioned six gold collars, twenty-four collars of silver gilt, and sixty collars of plain silver ; (de ordine et liberata regis, &c.) which I take to mean of the order and livery (with distinctive embellishments) the king gives ; and that the Treasurer aforesaid cause the said collars to be transmitted to his most dearly beloved brother the King Emperor ; that they may be presented to the inhabitants of Basil, and to other Knights and Esquires, at the discretion of the aforesaid Emperor,

peror, and the king's embassador residing there. Cleopatra,
F. 4. at the date.

I shall close this selection with copying a petition at length, relating to assaults and depredations committed upon the inland navigation of this kingdom; both as it gives a particular and minute account of the depredations therein complained of, and I am happy to be able to add the only instance of the kind or complaint made to be found from the first of Edward the Third's to the end of Henry the Sixth's reign; and more especially for the matter of law it contains, and the highly proper and wise measures thereupon pursued to discover and bring the offenders to justice, and to procure an adequate redress and reparation to the parties injured and despoiled, for their damages sustained.

Anno 8. Hen. 6. 1430. m. 30. Petition of the Commons.
A roy notre tres souverain seigneur, et a les seigneurs espirituals et temporels en cest present parlement.

Beseecheth meekly the bailiffs, burgeses and commonalty of Tewkesbury within the Shire of Gloucester; that where the said town of Tewkesbury within the Shire of Gloucester, is nigh adjoining to the river of Severne within the same shire, which river is common to all your people, our sovereign Lord, for to carry, recarry,

and leade within the stream of the said river, in boats, trowes, and otherwife, all manner of merchandize and other goods and chattells to Bristow, and to every part adjoinant unto the said river : divers persons of Tewkesbury aforesaid oftentimes, and now late have charged their own vessells and trowes, with wheat, malt and other corns and goods to the value of 500l. and the same vessells and trowes so charged have conveyed in the said river towards the said town of Bristol, by the coasts of the Forest of Dean, within the said shire adjoinant to the said river. There have come great multitude of people, and routs of the Commons of the said forest, and of the hundreds of Bledelow and Westburg, with great riot and strength in manner of war, as enemys of a strange country ; and have with force despoiled the same persons of the said vessells, and taken from them all their corn and goods within the same vessells, and them menaced to be dead, if they made any resistance, or any suit or quarrel therefore ; to great aneantizing and impoverishing of them, and oppression to all the country adjoinant. And sith ye ~~our~~ sovrain Lord, by advice of your Council, sent your letter of Privy Seal directe to divers persons of the said forest to make proclamation, that there should no man of your said forest be so hardy to lette your people to pass by the said river, with all manner of corns or goods and chattells,

tells, ne none other manner of merchandise, in no wise upon the pain of treason. After the which proclamation made, the said trespassers came to the said river with greater routs and riots than ever they did before, setting no prize by your said Privy Seal; and there despoiled eight trowes of wheat, malt and flour, and other divers goods; and the men of the said trowes cast over the board, and divers of them drowned; and the hawlfers of the said trowes cut in twain; and menaced the owners of the said goods and the said trowmen, that they should not be so hardy to carry no manner of victual by the said stream up ne down, for Lord ne Lady; and that they would all to (hewe and) heave (overboard) the said trowes and their goods coming any more, by the coasts of the said forest. For which riot and rebellion there dare no common person of Tewkesbury afore said, ne of the country adjoinant, carry corn ne other goods in the said river; ne sue to have remedy for such oppressions and wrongs done to them; inasmuch as the said forest and hundreds been large countrys, and wild of people, and nigh adjoinant to Wales; and all the Commons of the said forest and hundreds of one affinity in malice and riot, setting no prize by the law, nor by the officers, nor by the ministers thereof; *nor charging the process ne the letter of the law of the land*, insomuch that they will not obey any minister.

nister of the law, nor the execution thereof but at their own lust. Nor the officers nor the ministers of the law of the same shire in any wise dare come within the said forest, or execute any matter or proceſſe of law againſt the will or intent of the Commons of the ſaid forest and hundreds.

Please it to our ſaid ſoverain Lord by the advice and aſſent of all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in this preſent parlement aſſembled; conſidered the miſchiefs aforeſaid and the inconvenience that is like to fall thereof; to ordain by authority of this preſent parlement, that in every ſuch caſe to come or within the year laſt paſt had, as follows. The ſheriff of the ſaid ſhire, or the bailiffs of the town of Glouceſter for the time being, or one of them, on pain of forfeiture of 20l. to be ceſſed of their lands, goods and chattels to the king's uſe, to make proclamation at Glouceſter aforeſaid within four days next after notice made to them or to any of them by the ſaid perſons ſo wronged, and the treſpaſſes done; that the ſaid treſpaſſers reſtore in the ſame town of Glouceſter within fifteen days after the ſaid proclamation to the ſaid partys ſo wronged, their ſaid corn and merchandize, goods and chattells ſo taken, or the very value of them, with reaſonable amends for their harms; of ſuch taking after proclamation if the ſaid treſpaſſers reſtore not the ſaid corn, merchandize, goods or chattells,

tells, or the value of them to the partys so aggrieved in the form abovefaid, with reasonable amends for their harms ; nor that the faid trespassers be not brought to your prison to the castle of Gloucester, for the faid trespasses by the officers of the faid forest and hundreds, or by the commonalty of the same, to be demeaned in such case by the king and his council ; that then by consideration of the statute of Winchester set for the robbery of any person (which) sueth an action for him that is robbed against the hundred, within the which the faid robbery be done, after the form of the faid statute ; the same commonaltys be charged of the same corn and merchandize, goods and chattels so taken, or of the very value of them to the party so grieved ; and to satisfy them of their harms for the same taking. And that the faid parties so wronged and grieved, may have their general actions of debt against the faid commonaltys of the faid forest and hundreds, of the sum of money to the which the value of the corn, merchandizes, goods and chattells extend so taken, (that the commonaltys be no commonaltys incorporate notwithstanding,) having process in such actions of debt by summons, attachment and distresses, as is to be had in any action of debt at common law ; so that if the faid commonaltys make default at the second distress in such actions, that then the party that sueth have judgment to recover

recover his debts against the said commonaltys, after the supposall of their writs in the form abovesaid with his reasonable costs and damages ; and what issue triable by inquest in the said courts and hundreds happeneth to be taken in such actions, that it be tried by inquests of corps in the same shire out of the same forest and hundreds : and that the goods and chattels of every singular person of the said commonaltys for the time being be had, taken and holden, as the common good and chattel of the same commonalty, touching the return, serving and all execution of the writs, processe and judgments, in and of the said actions ; and that every singular person of the said forest and commonalty have power by the authority of the same parlement to attach and arrest the trespassers by their bodys, as well within the said forest as without, and them so arrested to commit to their said prison ; and that the keeper and warden of the same prison, upon the pain of forty pounds to be raised of his goods and chattels, lands and tenements to the king's use, safely keep every person to his ward so committed, unto the time the king or his council have of record, their deliverance ordained or purveyed. And if the goods or chattels of any such person or persons of the said forest or hundreds, being not guilty of such despoiling, happeneth to be put in execution, because of any such actions or judgments,

that

that then the action of debt or trespass upon their case against the said trespassors, to recover the damages as well for the value of their goods and chatels so put in execution, as for their harms and costages that happeneth to be had, because of the said actions of debt; having proceffe in the said actions of debt or trespass, as it is to be had in the said actions of debt for the said persons so endamaged and despoiled.

Resp. Soit fait come il est desire par la petition. Harl. Manusc. No. 16. p. 66.

I now proceed to give a more particular account of the great fleet collected by king Edward the Third, in the twentieth year of his reign, for his intended expedition against France. From the proclamation of that year, above recited in page 163, it appears, that the ships furnished by the Cinque Ports were summoned to assemble at Sandwych port on the Monday after Ascension Day, and from that port after the junction of the whole fleet from the other ports of the kingdom, the king with his army, after constituting Lionel, his second son, afterwards Duke of Clarence, with certain Lords appointed for his councill, guardian of the realm, embarked and set sail on Sunday the third day of July 1345, as appears from the following extract.

Anno 20. Ed. 3. Rex die Dominico videlicet tertio die Julii hoc anno extra regnum Angliæ in portu Sandwici super mare transivit quo die idem rex quoddam magnum figillum suum pro regimine Angliæ ipso rege sic in remotis agente Roberto de Sadyngton Cancellario suo. Index literarum patentium, ad annum 19. E. 3.

Lionellus filius regis custos regni Angliæ ac locum tenens in eodem ac commissarius de intendendo, in qua sunt nomina diverforum principalium ministrorum regis ac aliorum a concilio. Id. ibid.

De marescalcia tenenda infra duodecim Leucas hospitii Leonelli filii regis ac custodis Angliæ in absentia regis. Id. ibid.

De inquirendo de excessibus per ministros regis factis in qua Johannes Talbot seneschallus hospitii regis. Id. ibid.

In stating the particulars of this great armament I shall confine myself to the authority of two manuscript accounts in the British Musæum of the Harleian collection, Numbers 78, pages 16 and 17, and 246. p. 15. &c. but principally to the latter, as being much more full and particular. There are some little variations between the two accounts, but not material, and they serve to confirm and illustrate each other. As the first is very short I shall begin with copying the whole of it here, with the view to give the reader at once a general
idea

idea of the whole of this armament, as well in the military as the naval line, and shall then proceed to a more particular investigation of that part only of the account in the Harl. Manusc. 246. in this volume that relates to the naval department.

The Harleian Manuscript, No. 78. is thus prefaced.

The copie hereof was found of Peter Burrow, written in an auncient hande with rede and blacke ynke.

King Edward the iijd. his viage into France, Normandie and the winning of Calyce.

In the year of our Lord 1345; the 3d day of September, the king Edward the Thirde laid siege to the town and castell of Caleis, and continued his seige by water and by land unto the third day of August nexte followinge; at the which day by the grace of God the saide towne and castell were delivered unto hym.

This was the retinue of king Edward the Third, in his coste towards the parties of France and Normandie, and during the seige of the towne and castell of Caleis.

Sir Edward Prince of Wales.

The Bishop of * Devylin.

Erles, — — — — —

* It should be Durham. William Hatfield, Bishop of Durham, attended King Edward the Third in this expedition.

Barons and Baronetts	—	—	—	47
Knyghts,	—	—	—	964
Squeres, constables and leaders of men,	—	—	—	3600
Vaulters and archers on horsebacke,	—	—	—	5104
Hobblers,	—	—	—	600
Archers on foote,	—	—	—	15480
Mafoners, carpenters, smythes, engeners, pavilouers, armorers and makers of archery,	—	—	—	380
Watchmen on foote,	—	—	—	4492
Sum of the number before saide,	—	—	—	<u>30492</u>
Item, maisters of shippes, shipmen and pages of shippes,	—	—	—	16000
Item, shippes of forstake,	—	—	—	50
Item, barges, ballengers and vitelers,	—	—	—	700
Sum of all the men above-named,	—	—	—	<u>16120</u>

Thes ben the names of the said retynue.

The Prynce Edward,

Wythe him Baronettes,	—	—	—	11
Knightes,	—	—	—	102
Squyres,	—	—	—	264
Archers on foote,	—	—	—	69
Archers on horseback	—	—	—	384
The				

The Erle of Lancafter,

Wyth him Baronettes,	—	—	—	11
Knightes,	—	—	—	7
Squyres,	—	—	—	512
Archers on horseback,	—	—	—	600

Sir William Beauchamp Erle of Nottingham,

Wyth hym, Baronets,	—	—	—	2
Knyghtes,	—	—	—	42
Squyres,	—	—	—	112
Archers,	—	—	—	141

Sir William Beauchamp Erle of Warwick,

Wythe hym, Baronettes,	—	—	—	3
Knyghtes,	—	—	—	44
Squyres,	—	—	—	131
Archers,	—	—	—	146

Sir Richard Erle of Arundel,

Wyth hym, Baronettes,	—	—	—	3
Knyghtes Bachelors,	—	—	—	36
Squyres,	—	—	—	58
Archers,	—	—	—	141
				Sir

Sir Robert Ufforde Erle of Suffolk,

Wythe hym, Knight Baronet,	—	—	1
Knights Bachilers,	—	—	36
Squyres,	—	—	58
Archers,	—	—	64

Sir William Clynton Erle of Huntyn done,

Knyghts Bannerettes,	—	—	2
Knyghts Bachelers,	—	—	30
Squyers,	—	—	93
Archers,	—	—	88

Sir John Veer Erle of Oxford,

Wyth hym, Knight Baronet,	—	—	1
Knights Bachilers,	—	—	22
Squyers,	—	—	44
Archers,	—	—	44

Sir Lawrence Hastings Erle of Pembroke,

Wyth hym, Knight Baronet,	—	—	1
Knight Bachiler,	—	—	1
Squyers,	—	—	24
Archers,	—	—	28
Hobblers,	—	—	26

Theis

Theis ben the names of divers Lordes witholden in the king's retinue that ben stayngers, and not emprised in the numbre before said.

*Loues Emperour of the Romaines to him
deliverde in preste at divers tymes for his

wages and his men,	—	—	£ 8227	—	—
To William Marcony Julian and his men,	-		8962	10	0
To Renolde Duke of Gilder and his men,			4512	0	0
To John Duke of Brabant and his men	-		500	0	0
To William Erle of Henaude and his men,	-		3100	0	0
To Threder Lorde of Fawkemonde and his men,			3364	8	0
To Charles Marke and his men,	-	-	700	0	0
To Bartolfe Erle of Baspyche and his men,	-		341	16	0
To the Archbishop of Tyers and his men,	-		606	0	0
To the Bishop Magonehsis and his men,	-	-	450	0	0
Summe prefts,	-	-	£ 31464	5	11

The sum total of the said expences, as well for wages, prestes, as for the expences of the king's house; and as for other giftes and rewards, and for shippes, and other things necessarie in the kinges parte as for France and Normandie, and before Caleis during the seige; as yt apperethe in the accoumpte of William Norwell, Keeper of the King's Gard-

* This was an old arrear, for the Emperor Louis was not in this expedition an ally of King Edward the Third's, but of the King of France. Vide Froissarts

rowle,

rowle, from the eleventh day of Julie the yeare of the reigne of the said king Edwarde the Thirde the 21st, unto the 20th day of May, in the year of his reigne the (xiiijth in the Manuscript, but a mistake, it should have been xviiiij,) that is to say, by a year and three quarters and forty-one dayes is, 337,104l. 9s. 3d. Harl. Manusc. No. 78. p. 16. and 17.

In the Harl. Manusc. No. 146. In the western district of the admiralty which extends from the mouth of the Thames along the southern and western coasts of the kingdom, including the ports of Wales, there are returns made from fifty ports and sea towns under the denomination of the south fleet.

And in the northern district of the admiralty, extending from the mouth of the Thames along the northern coasts to Scotland, there are returns made from thirty-one ports and sea towns as follows. Harl. Manusc. No. 246. p. 15.

The number of shippes and maryners that served King Edward the Third in these wars, anno 20, 1345.

The Sowthe Fleete.

The king's shippes	-	25	—The maryners	-	-	409
London shippes	-	-	25	—The maryners	-	662
						Aylesford

Aylesford shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 24
Lee shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 24
Maydestone shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 51
Hope, (Bay near Ramsgate,)			
shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 59
Margate shippes	- - - 15—	The maryners	- - - 160
Nonehethe shippes	- - - 5—	The maryners	- - - 49
I am rather at a loss where to fix the situation of this port.			
Hythe, one of the Cinque Ports in Kent, is clearly specified hereafter. I find indeed a name something like it, Minheneth or Minhined, Tregally manor, a fishing town, situated on a branch of the river Looe in Cornwall. See Camden's Britannia, the last ed. vol. 1. p. 18.			
Montorment shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 23
Probably Tormount, a small village in Torbay, Devonshire, is here meant. Camd. vol. 1. p. 27.			
Feversham shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 53
Sandwych shippes	- - - 22—	The maryners	- - - 504
Dover shippes	- - - 16—	The maryners	- - - 334
Wighite	- - - 13—	The maryners	- - - 220
Winchelsea shippes	- - - 21—	The maryners	- - - 396
Weymouth shippes	- - - 15—	The maryners	- - - 263
Lyme shippes	- - - 4—	The maryners	- - - 62
Seton shippes	- - - 2—	The maryners	- - - 25

The following curious account of the ancient state of this port in very early times, extracted from Leland, in Camden's Britannia, cannot, I presume, but prove an acceptable entertainment to the reader.

Ther hath beene a very notable haven at Seton, but now ther lyith between the two pointes of the old haven a mighty rigge and barte of pebble-stones in the very mouth of it; and the river of Axe is driven to the vesy est point of the haven, called Whitcliff, and ther at a very smaull gut goeth into the fe; and here come in small fischar botes for succour. The towne of Seton is now but a meane thing, inhabited by fischar men, it hath bene far larger when the haven was good. Camd. Brit. vol. 1. p. 37.

Sidemouth shippes	- - 3	—The maryners	- - 62
Barnmouth shippes	- 10	—The maryners	- - 193
Tegmouth shippes	- - 7	—The maryners	- - 120

I am quite at a loss where to fix the situation of this port, unless it be at the mouth of the river Axe, anciently called the Taw river, where it joins the sea from Barnstaple in Devonshire; and I conjecture it probably is so from the following extract from Camden.

Leland supposes Barnstaple was called in British Abertaw, which denotes the mouth of the Taw, and Berdenes for Abertaw; nesse;

ness; staple is an addition for a market. It is now one of the neatest towns in the county, and by favour of the river drives a considerable trade. Camd. vol. 1. p. 40.

Dortmouth Devon, shippes	32—The maryners	- -	756
Portsmouth shippes	5—The maryners	- -	96
Plymouth shippes	26—The mariners	- -	603
Looe shippes	20—The maryners	- -	313
Yalme shippes	2—The maryners	- -	47

The place here meant is probably a small fishing town of that name, lying in Looe Creek, Fowey Bay in Cornwall. Vide Camden.

Foway shippes	47—The maryners	- -	770
Bryftoll shippes	22—The maryners	- -	608
Teynemouthe shippes	2—The maryners	- -	25

A little village, or fishing town, situated at the mouth of the river Teigne in Devonshire. Camd. vol. 1. p. 27.

Haltings (Hastings) shippes	5—The maryners	- -	96
Rumner shippes	4—The maryners	- -	65
Rye shippes	9—The maryners	- -	156
Hythe shippes	6—The maryners	- -	122
Shoram shippes	20—The maryners	- -	329
Soforde shippes	5—The maryners	- -	80
Newmouthe shippes	2—The maryners	- -	18

The place here meant I take to be New Town in the Isle of Wight, thus described in Camden. Newton is a mean market and burrough town in the Isle of Wight, with the best haven in the island, Yarmouth another, &c. Camd. vol. i.

p. 144.

Hannil hoke shippes - - - 7—The maryners - - - 117

Hoke shippes - - - 11—The maryners - - - 208

This port is thus described by Leland, iii. p. 77, as quoted by Camden.

Three miles from Hamel Hoke, that lyeth at the east point of Southamton haven, goeth a creke by north-east up in to the land called commonly Hamel or Hanin creke, wherein is a very fair road. It takes name from a good fischar town, called Hamelle Rife, that lyeth about a mile inward on the left by west from the creek mouth. The town now longeth to the new college Winchester. Camd. vol. i.

p. 138.

Southampton shippes - 21—The maryners - - - 576

Lymington shippes - 9—The maryners - - - 159

Poole shippes - - - 4—The maryners - - - 94

Warham shippes - - - 3—The maryners - - - 59

Swanzey shippe - - - 1—The maryners - - - 29

Ilsercombe shippes - - - 6—The maryners - - - 79

The

The sea town here meant is most probably Iffracombe in Devonshire, remarkable for Mr. Camden's having been Prebendary of it. It belonged to the church of Salisbury, and was tenable by a layman. It is thus described (Risd. 122.). The corporation is rich and the town populous. There is a good road for ships, and a pier on which are constantly maintained lights for the benefit of the seamen. Camden, vol. 1. p. 40.

Potterickstone shippes - 2—The maryners - - 27

I am quite at a loss to ascertain the situation of this and the two following ports or fishing towns. With respect to the first indeed I find the name of a port nearly similar, but then it is situated in the northern district of the admiralty, and if the place meant here, it should have been inserted in the list of the north fleet. It is Botherwick west and east, situated on both sides the Trent, at the Isle of Axholme, formed by the rivers Trent, Idell and Dun.

Polerwan shippe - 1—The maryners - 60
Wadworth shippe - 1—The maryners - 14

I can find no trace of either of these places, which I rather think lie upon the Welch coast.

Kerdiffe

Kerdiffe shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	51
Bridgewater shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	15
Carmarthen shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	16
Colchefworth shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	12
Mullbroke shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	12
Sum of the Sowthe Fleete shippes,	—			493
The maryners,	—	—	—	9030
Harl. Manusc. 246. p. 16.				

The North Fleete.

Bambrughe shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	9
------------------	---	----------------	---	---

Bamburghe lyes upon the Northumberland coast, between Holy Island and Sunderland, anciently called Bebba, and is thus described by Roger Hoveden. Bebba is a strong city, not very large, but including about two or three acres, having one entrance hollowed out and raised with steps in a surprizing manner; and on the top of the hill a beautiful church; and to the west, at the top, a fountain adorned with extraordinary workmanship, sweet to the taste and clear to the eye. At this time it is rather a castle than a city, though large enough to pass for a city. Nor was it accounted any other than a castle when William Rufus erected over against it a tower called Malvoisin to blockade Mowbray, who was in rebellion
against

against him, and concealed himself there, but afterwards privately withdrew himself. It lost the greatest part of its beauty long after in the civil wars, when Bresse, a Norman warrior, who sided with the House of Lancaster, cruelly defaced it. From that time it has suffered from time and winds, which throw up incredible quantities of sand from the sea upon its walls through the windows which are open. In the next parish Emildon John Duns, surnamed Scotus, was born. Camden's Britannia, vol. 3. p. 238.

Newcastle upon Tyne shippes	27—	The maryners	-	314
Wollriche shippe	-	1—	The maryners	- 12
Hartilpool shippes	-	5—	The maryners	- 145
Hulle shippes	-	16—	The maryners	- 466

The town of Kingston was in the time of Edward the Third but a mean fisher town, and longed as a member to Hasill village, two or three miles up on the Humber. The first great increasing of the town was by passing for fish into Iseland, from whence the whole trade of stokefish into England, and partlie other fish. In Richard the Third's tyme the town waxed very rich, and Michael de la Poole, merchant of Hulle, and prentice as some say to one Rotenhering of the same town, came into so high favor for wit, activity and riches that he was made Counte of Suffolk. Whereupon

upon he got of King Richard the Second many grants and privileges to the town. And yn his tyme it was wonderfully augmented in building, and was inclofed with ditches, and the waul begon, and in continuauce ended and made all of bricke, as moft part of the houfes of the town at that tyme were. In the walle be four principal gates and twenty-five towers, from the mouth of the Hulle river upper, into the haven there is no walle. Leland i. 52. Camd. vol. 3. P. 74.

York shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	9
Ravenfec shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	27

In thefe parts of Holderneffe have been feveral towns fwallowed up by the Humber and the fea, particularly Fifmerk, which in the eighth of Edward the Third pleaded the encroachments of the fea and river for a deduction in the rating to the tenth and fifteenth, which was granted. So again in the 16th of Edward the Third: And in the thirtieth of Edward the Third. The tides in the Humber rifing four feet higher than ufual might then deftroy them. About the fame time alfo Ravenfec, which feems the fame with Ravenspur and Ravensburg might be dammaged and not long after totally deftroyed. The people hereabout talk of two other towns, Upfall and Potterfleete,

terfleete, which are now gone. Tharlethorp, Redwaye and Penyſthorp, anno 16th of Edward the Third were allowed an abatement in their rates for the ſame cauſe, none of which are now to be heard of. It is likewiſe mentioned by the ſame author, Hide by Shipſey, was devoured by the ſea, and that Hornſey by tradition and an inſcription in the town, which ſays, it was once ten miles from the ſea, but now only one. Camden's Brit. vol. 3. p. 77, &c.

Wodhouſe ſhippe - 1—The maryners - 12

The place here meant I take to be Wade caſtle or Wadegrave, afterwards called Moulſt Grace or Moulſtgrave, near Whitby, in Brunſwic Bay, ſituated on a ſteep hill, between two higher hills on the ſea-ſhore. Vide Camden's Britannia.

Stock hithe ſhippe - 1—The maryners - 10

Barton ſhippes - - 3—The maryners - 30

Barton in Lincolnſhire upon the river Humber. From Grimsby the ſhore retires with a great bend to let in the Abus Æſtuarium or Humber by Thornton, where is the moſt famous paſſage into Yorkſhire. Camd. vol. 3. p. 230.

Swyn fleete ſhippe - 1—The maryners - 11

Salt fleete ſhippes - 2—The maryners - 49

Y y Saltmarſhe

Saltmarsh and Swynflete are situated on the opposite side of the river Owse in Yorkshire, near its confluence with the river Trent. Camden.

Saltflete lyes on the sea-coast, between Grimsby and Legernefs, Lincolnshire.

Grimsbye shippes - 11—The maryners - 171

Grymsbye, a market, corporation and burrough town in Lincolnshire, the harbour is choaked up. John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury and Martin Fotherby, Bishop of Salisbury, were born here. Camden's Brit. vol. 3. p. 275.

Wainfleete shippes - 2—The maryners - 49

Wainfleete, a pretty market-town in Lincolnshire, standing on a creek near the sea. To this town long small vessells. It hath been a very good town, and in it two good churches. The schooll that Wainfleet, Bishop of Winchester, made and endowed with ten pounds land is the most notable thing. The shippelets in Hominum Memoria came up to the schooll. Leland vii. 50. Camd. vol. 3. p. 275.

Wrangle shippe - 1—The maryners - 8

Lemye shippes - 19—The maryners - 382

Of the first, Wrangle, I can find no trace, I rather think Lemye means the port of Lynn in Norfolk.

Blackney

Blackney shippes	-	2—The maryners	-	-	38
Scardboroughe shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	-	19
Yarmouth shippes	-	43—The maryners	-	-	1950
Dornewiche shippes	-	6—The maryners	-	-	102

I rather think the place here meant is Dunwich upon Mifmere haven in Suffolk.

Orford shippes	-	-	13—The maryners	-	303
Ipswiche shippes	-	-	3—The maryners	-	62
Merseye (Isl. Essex) shippes	13—The maryners	-	-	-	303
Brightlensea shippes	-	14—The maryners	-	-	283
Colchester shippes	-	12—The maryners	-	-	239
Whithanes shippe	-	1—The maryners	-	-	6

I am rather inclined to think that the place here meant is not Whitham in Essex, but Whitham, a town standing upon the river of that name, navigable from Boston up to Lincoln.

The principal house of the Delalandes was at North Witham in Lincolnshire, upon or by Witham Water. The place is ancient, fair and strong, and hath goodly commoditys about it. Leland It. vi. 68. Camd. 3. vol. p. 246.

Darwen shippes	-	5—The maryners	-	-	90
----------------	---	----------------	---	---	----

I am not able to ascertain the situation of the above place,

unless it be Workington, at the mouth of the river Derwent in Cumberland, famous for its salmon fishery. Camd. vol. 3. p. 171.

Boston shippes - - 17—The maryners - - 361

Boston, or more properly St. Botho or Buttolphs town, in Upper Holland, Lincolnshire, a considerable town, standing on both sides the river Witham, over which there is a lofty wooden bridge. This place fell into miserable decline in the reign of king Edward the First. For in the then universal corruption of manners throughout England, certain military men, appointing a tournament here at the fair time, came to it in the disguise of monks and cannons, fired the town in several places, and fell upon the merchants; carrying off large quantities of goods and burning more with such violence, that our historians say melted gold and silver ran together in the streets, as the ancients relate happened at the destruction of Corinth. Better times succeeding, raised Buttolphs town once more out of its ashes; and the staple for woolls, &c. being settled here brought in great wealth, and invited the merchants of the Hanseatick league, who established here their guild or house. It is at present handsomely built, and drives a considerable trade: and the inhabitants apply themselves to trade and grazing of cattle. Camd. vol. 3. p. 224.

Swyn

Swyn Humber shippes - 2—The maryners - - 32

Probably the place here meant is Swine or Swiney, in the mouth of the Humber, near Hull. Vide Camd. vol. 3. p. 74.

Maldon (Essex) shippes - 2—The maryners - - 32

Barton shippes - - 5—The maryners - - 61

I am quite at a loss to ascertain the situation of this town, unless it be Burnham, near Foulness island on the coast of Essex.

Sum of the North Fleet shippes — 217

The maryners — — — 4521

Sum total of the English fleet shippes — 710

Maryners — — — 14451

Shippes and maryners of forrain countrys.

Bayon shippes - - 15—The maryners - - 439

Spayne shippes - - 7—The maryners - - 184

Ireland shippe - - 1—The maryners - - 184

Flanders shippes - - 14—The maryners - - 133

Guelderland shippe - 1—The maryners - - 24

Total shippes - - 37—The maryners - - 825

Harl. Mausc. No. 246. p. 17.

I shall

I shall conclude what I had to offer on the subject of the English navy in general and of this armament in particular, and close this volume with making one general observation from the whole. It is this, that if we review the state of the Navy of England, equally in the line of war and commerce, in those several periods of time when we have reason to believe it was in its most flourishing state; even from the time of Julius Cæsar's account of it, and particularly under the reigns of the kings Alfred, Edgar, Ethelred, Richard, Edward the First, Second, and Third, and even for two centuries lower down to the end of queen Elizabeth's reign: it will appear always to have maintained a decided allowed pre-eminence and respectability in the eye of all the European states; and yet perhaps not to have attained, in the progression of ages that equally progressive gradatory increase and improvement, which might have been naturally expected; and which really has since been so remarkably and happily achieved and exemplified from the last mentioned date to the present times. In the sixteenth century indeed the ships of war were the property of the crown, and the impressing of the merchants ships for war totally disused, except merely for the transport and victualling service. And as from the introduction and use of great guns on board, it became necessary for government here
and

and every where else not only to build their own ships of war but for the same reason to attend very particularly to the strength of their construction likewise. For it is to the introduction and use of these dreadful instruments of destruction that we are to attribute, in the first instance, as well the subsequent improvements and perfection in ship building, in size and strength of construction for the purposes of war merely, that gradually took place here and every where throughout Europe ; as likewise the calling forth and encouraging that martial spirit of adventure and enterprize, which stimulated this and the other European states to make discoveries, to achieve the conquest of territory, and to form settlements in every distant part of the globe. In proportion as they succeeded in making such acquisitions, a commensurate extension of trade and commerce necessarily followed ; and in consequence, an adequate increase of the number of ships and vessels calculated in their construction, for the purposes of trade and commerce merely.

It were perhaps a matter of pleasing speculation, (although any investigation we can make, at this distance of time, may not enable us to ascertain the point with any degree of certainty); to enquire, what might be the total aggregate of the tonnage of all the shipping of England in general, in the year 1345,

or

or at any other period during the fourteenth century. If I may be allowed to hazard a conjecture, I am upon the whole inclined to think, that the armament of the twentieth year of king Edward the Third, consisted at least of the greater part, if not of nearly the whole of the shipping of England of above thirty tons burthen at that time existing. And my reasons for thinking so are these :

It is clear from the preceding pages, that in those days there was no distinction observed with regard to the ships as designed and appropriated for the purposes either of war or trade merely ; and that the 750 ships of that armament, if we except the twenty-five ships which are there said to belong to the king, were in general employed and used as occasion served, indifferently for either service. We may observe too farther, that probably in that age no long voyages were ever attempted beyond the limits of Europe, nor any performed during the winter months. It was not usual I believe for any ships whatever bound outwards, to quit their ports before the spring was advanced ; and that they regularly all returned into port before the commencement of the winter. The proclamation in the 20th of Edward the Third addressed to the sheriffs of the several counties to prevent all manner of persons whatever quitting the kingdom, except from the port of Dover, and

and with the special license of the king; and the summons to the Cinque Ports to furnish their full quota of ships and men for this expedition, were dated on the tenth and fourteenth of March. Now it is not to be supposed, but in a case of long premeditated concert, preparation and public notoriety as this was, the King and Council would take care that both these orders were issued sufficiently early in point of time, and before the usual season of the ships quitting their ports to proceed on their respective voyages for that year. It is very probable to suppose too, that conformably to the usage of those times; as particularly in the armament of the thirteenth year of Ed. 3. 1338. as has been already related, p. 166. they did not neglect to issue at the same time orders to the admirals of the ports, Sheriffs, Mayors, Bailiffs, &c. of the sea towns throughout the sea-coasts, to arrest and detain the ships of thirty tons and upwards in all the ports of England, until the proportion wanted for the embarkation of this armament was every where fully supplied. Indeed it was a precaution generally taken in the commissions of naval impress to order all the ships in that port or district to be arrested and detained, until the specific number of ships required was furnished and security given by the owners or masters as will appear from the above recited instances, anno 14. E. 3. p. 134, anno 16. E. 3. p. 175. an. 12. R. 2. p. 168. and an. 21. H. 6. p. 174.

The departure of this fleet was from some cause or other protracted from the Quindean of Pascha, to the second week of July; when the whole set sail together from Sandwych. And yet I have not found any proclamation or order of council of that year, to dearrest the remaining shipping in the several ports, and take off the general embargo, if any such had been laid; after the king's service was sufficiently provided for. Upon these reasons I am rather inclined to believe that the greater part if not nearly the whole of the shipping of England, of the tonnage above specified, were employed in the expedition of 1345.

I am farther strongly impressed with the idea that from the last mentioned year, during the remainder of king Edward the Third's reign, and I might add, during the succeeding reigns, for two hundred years to the time of queen Elizabeth; the navy of England in general continued for the most part in a declining state. It never within that period at least attained that degree of increase and prosperity, except perhaps in the 10th year of queen Elizabeth, as to set out a larger fleet, than the armament abovementioned. The decay of the navy is very frequently made an object of complaint, in the petitions of the Commons down to the end of Henry the Sixth's reign. From that time indeed the number of the king's ships increased as well in number as size, in proportion probably as the taking up of the merchants ships by impress for the service of government in war,

war, grew into discredit and disuse. But so far down as the thirty-first of queen Elizabeth, I do not recollect any one year where the royal navy amounted to more than 137 ships of all sizes (page 197), or of one ship more than one thousand tons portage, which could not be greatly superior to the tonnage of the fifty ships of Forstage in king Edw. 3d's armament.

With respect to the Cinque Ports, the great dependence of the old navy from the earliest ages, they appear to have been rather upon the decline in 1345, and from that time to have sunk gradually almost to a comparative degree of insignificance. They contributed indeed, as appears from the list of the quota of the several ports 86 ships, and 1726 mariners to that armament, instead of 57 and 1147 mariners, which they were bound to furnish by charter, namely,

Faversham Ships	—	2—Mariners	—	53
Sandwyck ditto	—	22—Mariners	—	504
Dover ditto	—	16—Mariners	—	334
Winchelsea ditto	—	21—Mariners	—	396
Hastings ditto	—	5—Mariners	—	96
Rye ditto	—	9—Mariners	—	156
Hythe ditto	—	6—Mariners	—	122
Rovendale or Rumney do.	—	4—Mariners	—	65
Pevensey, none under that name.				

But as has been shewn already in the thirteenth year of king Edward the Third, government as a matter of grace and favour, engaged to be at half the expence in raising and fitting out their quota of ships for that armament, (which was then only thirty in number, see page 165.) whereas by their charters they were bound to be at the whole expence themselves, until five days after the junction of their ships with the admiral's flag. It may reasonably be supposed, that some kind of similar indulgence, grace and favour, was extended to them by government upon this occasion likewise; especially as within two years after, anno 22. E. 3. they expressly petition the king for an abatement of their old accustomed service fixed by their charter.

However, be that as it may, the great decline of the Cinque Ports, and perhaps I might add of the commercial navy of England in the course of 242 years, from the 20th year of the reign of king Edward the Third, is clearly made out in the following abstracts of certificates, returned to the queen's council in 1587, and the following year, being the thirtieth and thirty-first of queen Elizabeth's reign. They are without date, defective, and in part not sufficiently explicit to be intelligible. But however as the original certificates themselves are I presume easily to be found and examined in the
public

public archives if necessary ; I shall give them here as they are, upon their own authority, for the sake of the aggregate total at the end of each. They are copied from the Cottonian Manuscript, Otho, E. x.

The first is entitled,

Abstract of a Certificate made anno 1587 to the Council, of all such Shippes, Barks, and other vessells belonging to the five Ports and Members thereof, together with the number of able Masters and serviceable Maryners inhabiting and belonging to the said Ports, as followeth, viz.

1. Sandwich hath shippes and barks from three tons to three score in burthen, — — — — 40
Masters 40, Maryners 62,
2. Deal hath small barks from the burthen of three tons to five, — — — — 5
Masters 5, Maryners 30,
3. Walmer hath small barks, from the burthen of two tons to three tons, — — — — 4
Masters 2, Maryners 0,
4. Ramsgate, small barks from the burthen of five tons to ten, — — — — 12
Masters 14, Maryners 00,
5. Dover,

5. Dover, small barks,	—	—	—	00
6. * * forde hath small barks and boats, Maisters,	—			00
7. Pevensey, small barks and boats, Maryners,	—			00

The whole number of the shippes, barks, small boats
and carryers, from the burthen of two tonnes up, — 214
Maisters, — — — — 228
Maryners, — — — — 952
Otho, E. x.

The second Abstract is entitled,

The number of Shippes throughout the realme, anno 31. Q.
Eliz. collected out of the certificates returned in anno 1588.

In Port of	Vessels above 100 ton.			Under 100 and above 80.			Under 80 ton.
London,	—	—	62	—	23	—	44
Essex,	—	—	9	—	40	—	145
Norfolk,	—	—	16	—	80	—	145
Suffolk,	—	—	27	—	14	—	60
Cornwall,	—	—	3	—	2	—	65
Devon,	—	—	7	—	3	—	109
Dorset,	—	—	9	—	1	—	51
Bristol and Somersset,	—	—	9	—	1	—	27

I. Wighte,

In Port of	Under above 100 ton.			Under 100 and above 80.			Under 80 ton.
I. Wighte,	—	—	00	—	00	—	29
Southton,	—	—	8	—	7	—	47
York,	—	—	11	—	8	—	30
Northumberland,	—	—	17	—	1	—	121
Lincolne,	—	—	5	—	0	—	20
Kente,	—	—	0	—	0	—	95
Suffex,	—	—	0	—	0	—	65
Cinque Ports,	—	—	0	—	0	—	220
Cumberland,	—	—	0	—	0	—	11
Gloucester,	—	—	0	—	0	—	29
Chester and Lancafter,	—	—	0	—	0	—	72
Sum total			183	—	180	—	1392

Otho, E. x.

With regard to both these papers I would observe, in general, that there seems a difficulty in ascertaining whether they include all the ships of every kind belonging to the several ports; or the ships only that were then at home and in port. If the latter, it is then very material to know, in what month of the year these surveys were taken, and returns made to the council board. In my own opinion these returns comprehend the whole of the shipping belonging to each port,

port, as the other commissions of inquest, array, imprest, &c. generally issued in the spring about March, before the ships had left the ports. There is another circumstance too clear I think to admit of a doubt, and that is, that none of these returns can include the queen's own ships or the royal navy, but only the merchant ships and vessels used for trade and commerce.

Imperfect as these abstracts are, yet if accurate, as far as they go, they contain curious matter of information; as they enable us to define and ascertain, as well the general comparative increase or decline of the shipping and trade of England in general, at that with any other period of time before or since; as also the relative proportion of both, in the ports within any of the counties herein specified, as well betwixt each other, as their own increase or decay at any other prior or subsequent period of time, wherever distinct specifications of their number of ships and mariners are to be met with.

With regard to the state of the shipping of the Cinque Ports, they mutually confirm and illustrate each the other. The first states the number at 214, and the highest tonnage of any ship at 60 tons. The second states them at 220 (a slight variation in the number, but not material) and expressly certifies, that they had no ship of eighty tons portage. The medium average
tonnage

tonnage of the whole fleet we may state at about 7568 tons. I state the medium to give them every advantage, for it is higher than it should be, and their masters and mariners were certified at 1180 men. All these circumstances are strong proofs how much the Cinque Ports were declined then, from what they were in the twentieth year of king Edward the Third ; when they contributed to his great armament eighty-one ships and 1727 mariners, at an average something more than twenty-one men, or one messe, to each ship ; which implies strongly in my opinion that some of those eighty-one ships must have been of larger tonnage than any they were masters of in 1587. For otherwise we must suppose (which is hardly probable) the whole of these eighty-one ships to have been of the same rate of sixty tons, which was the highest rate stated in these returns in 1587 ; or otherwise supposing part of them of several inferior rates and tonnage, as is much more probable to have been the case, their fleet in 1345 must have been overmanned, especially as they had a nearly equal complement of soldiers to receive afterwards on board, when they joined the king's fleet. And even still it appears that in 1587 the whole force they were in possession of, of ships of sixty tons, did not exceed forty in number, not half so many ; nor the whole aggregate of their mariners not more than two-thirds, of what they had actually furnished in king Edward the Third's reign.

With regard to the second abstract, in order to form something of a probable idea of the aggregate tonnage of all the commercial shipping of England in the thirtieth year of queen Elizabeth in 1588, I think it will be a tolerably fair and liberal calculation in its favour, to average the first class of ships from one hundred tons to an indefinite amount at 166 tons each, and the two next classes, from eighty tons to one hundred, and from two tons up to eighty, at the average mediums; the first of ninety, and the second of forty tons each ship; which in the two last classes is certainly higher than it ought to be. However, at this rate of calculation the whole aggregate of the tonnage of the shipping of all England of every size, exclusive of the royal navy, which I do not apprehend to have been included in these abstracts, and including the tonnage of the shipping of the Cinque Ports and their members before separately given; (which however under this mode of calculating, forty, the medium of that class, gains 1232 tons here, more than when calculated as before, at a medium average in each class); will, if I have made no mistake, in the whole aggregate, amount to 103,280 tons, in the 183 ships of 100 tons and upwards, in the 180 ships of from 80 to 100 tons, and in the 1392 ships of from two to 80 tons; burthen in the whole 1755 ships. The which taken collectively constituted
probably

probably the whole of the commercial navy of England at that period. How far it has declined since the twentieth year of king Edward the Third cannot now be ascertained with accuracy and precision, unless we had as particular an estimate of the whole number of the shipping in the ports of the several counties, at that or any intermediate years, as the general abstract above recited. The general list we have of king Edward the Third's armament does not specify the several distinct rates and tonnage, except that fifty of them were ships of forrage, and the remainder barges, ballingers and vittellers. The question is therefore of the remaining 700 ships, how many were there above one hundred tons burthen, and how many of between eighty and one hundred. We know that in the thirtieth year of queen Elizabeth there were in all the ports but one hundred and eighty of the first description of private ships, and one hundred and eighty-three of the second. It appears indeed from the second commission of arrest in the same year for eighty large ships (*grossas navas*, vide p. 206.) which had against his Majesty's express commands to the contrary deserted the king's flag, after his descent on the coast of Normandy, and returning home were remanded to their station by this commission of arrest; that these eighty large ships I say had been furnished for that armament (with probably others

of the same rates, which did not transgress the king's orders by returning home) from the ports only of Great Yarmouth, Orewell, Boston, Kingeston, Lynne and Gosford, including that part only of the northern district of the admiralty from the Humber eastward. The next question is, what size or rate are we to understand by the term *grossæ naves*? I should suppose at the lowest ships of one hundred tons and upwards; and for this reason. In the armament of 1338, in the thirteenth year of Edward the Third, with which he gained that memorable victory over the French fleet in the Water of Swyn; the Cynque ports undertook to furnish twenty-one ships of their own, and nine of the river Thames, of one hundred tons and upwards: and the mariners of the west likewise undertook, to find seventy ships for that armament, all of them of one hundred tons and upwards; as appears from the rolls of parliament, (see p. 165. of this volume). This was a voluntary offer on their side, and by no means necessarily implies, that the hundred abovementioned include the whole of the ships of that ascending size and rate that either parties were possessed of. The contrary is, in my opinion, a much more probable supposition. And yet these ships which probably nearly all existed in the 20. E. 3. or were replaced, added to the eighty large ships, which the six ports only of the northern

thern district of the admiralty certainly did furnish to that armament, and probably were not of a lower rate of tonnage than the fleets of the Cynque and Western Ports abovementioned, will of themselves make the whole number of the ships of that tonnage existing at all *throughout all the ports of England*, in the thirty-first year of queen Elizabeth.

The Reader by comparing the returns of many of the counties, and in particular of the Port of Bristol and County of Somerset, in the second general abstract, with the number of ships and men furnished by the ports situated within the respective counties to the armament of 1345, will find abundant reason to confirm him in the opinion, that the commercial shipping of England, during something more than two centuries, had declined, both in number and size, at the time these returns were made in 1588.

I have dwelt the longer upon this subject principally with a view to contrast the ancient state of the English navy with that happy alteration, which from that time began to take place; and has gradually established, increased and raised the navy of England equally in the line of war and commerce, to that astonishing degree of strength, prosperity and pre-eminence, beyond all parallel, in any other age or nation. It is a contemplation that must penetrate the soul of every subject of these
kingdoms

kingdoms with rapture and exultation ; who has the honour, interest, welfare, and happiness of his country sincerely at heart, and knows how to value as they deserve, that brave, honest, adventurous race of men, to whose unremitting labours, enterprizing intrepidity, and habitual defiance of every kind of hardship difficulty or danger, this nation is indebted, under the favour of Divine Providence, for all these benefits and advantages, unremittingly accruing in an increasing ratio, throughout the two centuries subsequent to the last-mentioned period, and down to the present time. Such have been the immense acquisitions of territorial dominion, the number and strength of royal fleets so superior and pre-eminent to those of every other power of Europe, and the multiplying the tonnage of our shipping for the purposes of trade and commerce, almost to a degree beyond the powers of calculation ; insomuch that the aggregate tonnage of the shipping belonging to many of our ports singly taken, will more than trebble the whole of the tonnage of the shipping of all the ports of England collectively taken in the thirty-first year of queen Elizabeth's reign : the enriching this highly-favoured land in the bounties of Providence with whatever is appropriate, useful and valuable, in the produce or manufactures of every other country upon earth, as well of the hotter climates of the East, as of the frozen regions

regions and seas of the North, and exporting back those of our own in exchange: in a word, where every returning tide wafts into our ports wealth superior to the produce of the mines of Potosi; and every ebb returns it back to be dispensed in the supply of the necessity, want, convenience or elegant accommodation, of almost every nation and people in the four quarters of the globe; have rendered this great and most respectable kingdom, if I may be allowed the expression, the public staple mart, and emporium of the whole earth.

These are the effects, these the blessings and advantages of that most wise policy, and unremitting attention; which has been uniformly directed for the last two hundred and thirty years, to the protecting, cherishing, regulating and increasing the navy and marine of Great Britain.

May the paternal care and attention of our most benign and gracious Sovereign, the wisdom of his Councils, the wise, provident and regulating attention of our parliaments to this great object; and especially that good faith, probity, honour and integrity so eminently characteristic of the merchants of Great Britain; and I may add too of the directors of our staple manufactories, and in some degree of the lowest artificers in our several branches of manufacture; all continue, as they have done hitherto, to go hand in hand in concurrent
harmony,

harmony, zeal, and exertion ; to guard, cherish and improve this immense interest, in all its branches, connections and dependencies ; and more especially, by advancing the marine of Great Britain, to every progressive degree of increase, strength and ulterior perfection, it yet may be found capable of attaining, under the favour of Divine Providence, hand down, secure and perpetuate to these realms, all these prosperities, blessings and advantages, if possible, to the end of time.

APPENDIX.

A P P E N D I X.

THE following curious extracts relating to the appointment of the four joint commissioners of the admiralty in the twentieth year of king Henry the Sixth, were by a strange inadvertence at the Printing-Office, omitted to be inserted in their proper place, which is in page 205, immediately following the abstract of the indenture made between king Henry the Eighth, in the fourth year of his reign, and Sir Henry Howard, Knight, for executing the office of Lord High Admiral of England.

The remainder consists of a variety of curious matter, which the Author has been fortunate in meeting with, since the respective sheets were printed off; where otherwise they would have been severally inserted in their proper places, had he been in possession of them at the time.

With regard to the powers granted to the joint commissioners for executing the office of Admiral of England, at sea at

least, during the admiralty of John Holland Duke of Exeter, anno 20. H. 6. to Sir William Iver Knight, John Heron, and Miles Stapylton, Esquires, and Sir Stephen Popham Knight, (Vide page 88. of this work) I can only subjoin all the particulars I have yet been able to meet with relative to those commissioners, from the minutes of the acts of the several Councils of that year.

Present the king, the Chancellor and the Earl of Suffolk.

I. Anno 20. H. 6. July 30th, Article the 2d. Ordered two letters of Privy Seal to Sir William Iver, Knt. John Heron and Myles Stapylton, Esquires, commanding them to doe, keep and perform certain covenants made by indenture between them and the king; as touching the governance and keeping of the sea, &c. for a certain time, according to the tenor of the said indenture.

Art. 3. Be there added to the commission made to Sir William Iver, Stapylton, Heron, &c. also Sir Stephen Popham, Knight; the which beeth assigned to the keeping of the sea, &c. And that for taking of their musters with others that beeth assigned herebefore, Sir William Popham and William Sopur of Hamton be added in the same commission, to take the said musters, &c.

II. August

II. August 21st. In the king's parlour at Shene, present the Cardinal of England, the Chancellor, Bishop of St. David's, the Treasurer, the Earl of Suffolk, Tiptoft, Hungerford, and Sir John Stourton.

Be there made letters, &c. to Sir William Iver, Sir Stephen Popham, John Heron and Myles Stapylton, Esquires, that howbeit that it is contained in the indentures made between the king and them as for keeping of the sea, that they should assemble and muster at the Cambre*, yet for certain causes moving the king and the counsell, that the said commissioners Iver and Stapylton come not at the Cambre, but meet in all haste with Popham that shall come out of Devon upon the sea under the Isle of Wight.

III. August 22. It was commanded that letters under the Privy Seal be directed to the Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Exchequer, to deliver in all haste after the sight of the letters to Sir Stephen Popham; who and Sir William Iver, Knight, Myles Stapylton and John Heron, Esquires, beth

* I am at a loss to ascertain precisely where the Cambre is, but am rather inclined to believe it means here the port of Plymouth, as I find from the last edition of Camden's Britannia a place nearly of this name in that vicinity, famous of old for an establishment of the Druids there.

Chambre Hill, near Redruth in Cornwall, is a complete system of Druidical worship. *Camd. Brit.* vol. 1. p. 17.

indented for a certain time to keep the seas; 200 spears, and 300 bows, and 300 chefts of arrows; to be equally departed amongst them all; the said Popham to account and reanswer of that thereof, shall not be duly dispended, &c.

A note here in the margin, also the letter that shall goe to Sir William Iver, Myles Stapylton and John Heron, was read, and passed; every each of them to have of that tenor two letters.

IV. August 23. In the king's presence at Shene, present also the Lord Chancellor, Lord Privy Seal, my Lords of Huntindon, Stafford, Hungerford, Tiptofte, and Sir John Stourton.

Be there made a letter to the Treasurer and Chamberlains to pay unto Sir Stephen Popham, who holds by indenture to goe to the sea, &c. to deliver unto him over that he hath and shall take by force and virtue of indentures in that behalf made between the king and him; victualling for one hundred archers, after the appointment of the act of parlement.

The king commanded for this service 500 bowes, 500 chefts of arrows, and the victualling as above.

Item, of the commissioners to take the commissions, and what instructions they shall have.

In the king's presence, the same day and place, present all
the

the said Lords, and my Lord Cardinal of England, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earl of Suffolk, and Viscount Beaumont. The question what grounds there be the king to set forth an army?

It was moved and thought good to be cherished, and the Lords to be bound therefore.

Also my Lord Cardinal of England said, that seeing the necessity of the king for monoye, thereof that he had he would lend it to him; but he said he had it not, vessell (plate) he hath, and thereof he would lend him to the value of 4000 marks. He to be answered of semblable vessel again; and if that his vessel should be coined, for to have over that, that the fashion of the vessel would cost.

My Lord of Gloucester will be bound.

It was moved that upon that that remained of the grounds made in the last parlement, the which as yet beeth unassigned, and also upon the ports and weddes (jewells) money might be borrowed.

Also it was moved that the king should purvey wheat here and send it into Guienne; and both it should victual them there, and the king thereby be greatly availed by the sale.

The Bishop of Sarum will be bound.

It was moved that letters should be directed to certain persons to lend. It

It was moved that the Treasurer of England should be sent for to tell what grounds the king had to borrow money on.

Stafford and Suffolk will be bound.

The chancellor will lay both his goods in mortgage and be bound.

V. August 24. In the king's great Chamber at Shene, present the Cardinal of England, the Chancellor, Privy Seal, Privy Signet, my Lords of Gloucester, Huntindon, Stafford, Suffolk, Hungerford, Tiptofte, and Sir John Stourton.

The letter as for cheviffance of money that shall goe to townships and other singular persons for to lend money, &c. for Guienne.

Be there made commissions to the Lords, Sheriffs and mightiest men in every shire of England, to loan amongst themselves, and also to cherish of others for the said necessities of Guienne.

Also be there made letters upon the said commission, to assemble the thrifty men in the shire to appear before the commissioners, and such as that at this time will lend money; shall (have) sureties of the dime and quinzisme, and of the king's jewells, and of other the king's customs, &c.

So that the viage goeth into Guienne there is granted the 24th day of August.

Stourton

Stourton Privy Seal 40l.

Hungerford 100l.

Tiptofte 100l.

Earl of Suffolk will be ready to be bound.

Huntindon 100l.

Stafford 120l. or as far as 500 marks will stretch to.

Bishop of Sarum 100l. to be assigned upon his own dismes.

The Chancellor 100l.

Earl of Dorset 100l.

My Lord the Cardinal 4000 marks in vessell, &c.

The Viscount Beaumont 100 marks.

My Lord of Gloucester will be bound as far as any man will take him in the king's necessity.

To be appointed who shall bear the commissions and letters.

VI. Coun. 20. H. 6. August 27. Present the Lords Chancellor, Huntindon, and the Privy Seal.

Popham to be sent for and to goe into Guienne, to be Seneschal, and to have leading of them that shall goe into Guienne.

VII. August 28. In the king's great Chamber at Kensington, present the King, the Cardinal, the Chancellor, and Lords Stafford, Hungerford and Sir John Stourton. It is assented

assented that Sir John Popham, Sir John Lysle, and William Sopur take the musters of Sir William Iver, Sir Stephen Popham, Miles Stapylton and John Heron, Esquires, under the Isle of Wyght.

That Serjeaunts of Arms be sent to such shippes as shall and woll goe for the viage to war, they to come to one place, and not to depart to the time the armee be ready.

Yarde to goe to the armee for the sea, to bid him goe foreright to Baion, to see the rule there.

Ordered a letter to them that shall goe to the sea, desiring them to goe foreright to Baion; and if it needed, they not to abide there; saying them that the king hath sent the five hundred archers with Sir Phillip Chetwynd; the which shall abide still there: and how that he will send thydder in haste, wheat and fodder. Cleopatra, F. 5. under the minutes of the Councils of the several dates.

Acta Concilii, anno 21. H. 6. March 21. Be there made letters under the Privy Seal to —— Cannings of Bristol, that there as a barge called the Catherine of Bristol is charged with wheat and other victual to the king's city of Baion, for the advictualling of it; that he take into the same vessell to Baion —— Bedan, Esq; whom the king sendeth now to Bourdeaux, Baion, Aix, and other places there, with his letters.

Also

Also Bedan shall have with him those letters to Bourdeaux doubled. Also a letter to the three Estates of Bourdelaye. Cleopatra, F. 5. at the date.

I have been more particular in stating the whole of these minutes as they serve to throw a light upon and explain the destination of the fleet raised by the ordinance of the navy (p. 115.) before recited, anno 20. H. 6; and likewise Sir Edward Howard's appointment as Lord Admiral, with remainder to his son, an infant, for their joint lives, (p. 88.) and especially as the whole taken collectively and considered with attention, it appears to me clearly that at this period (and I believe it is the first instance of the kind) the executive part at least of the office of High Admiral of England, was in the present instance executed by these four joint commissioners abovenamed severally indented with the king, and receiving equal powers independent of each other: and without any distinct specification of district of command assigned to either appearing upon these minutes. And this idea is greatly strengthened and confirmed by the appointment of the five Lords to hold this high office by commission for their lives, made twelve years after, anno 32. H. 6. 1453. before recited. With regard to the powers given to the last-named five Lords joint Commissioners of the Admiralty of England, I am not suffi-

ciently instructed to give any farther information, than by referring the reader to the abstract of their patent recited in page 92 of this work.

No. II. Supplemental to the account of Sir Thomas de Molton, in page 11.

In the list of the patents of the forty-eighth year of king Henry the Third, in the Harl. MSS. No. 88. ad annum, are the three following titles.

Thomas de Molton Capitaneus five Admirallus Maris ac partium maritimarum, 9. 1.

De navibus contra hostilem adventum extraneorum. Apud Canterb. viceffimo primo Septembris, 11. 1.

De defendendo costeras maris comitatum Kantiaë et Suffexiaë, contra invasiones extraneorum. 14. 1. Harl. Manusc. No. 88. ad annum.

Cartæ, anno 16. H. 3. Thomæ de Muleton. Harl. Manusc. 6194. p. 74.

Anno 14. E. 1. Lambert de Muleton tenuit de rege in capite Egremond in com. Cumbriaë, per servitium unius fœdi Milit. anno 14. Ed. 1. Claudius, c. x. p. 18.

Anno 23. Ed. 1. Thomas de Multon tenuit duas baronias. Ibid. p. 38.

Anno

Anno 53. H. 3. m. 16. The king confirms to Edward, son of Sir Thomas Moleton in tail general, the manors of Ifall in Blencraik, with remainder to Hubert his brother. Harl. Manusc. 88. p. 104.

No. III. Anno 19. H. 3. 1234. Pro olavo rege Manniæ de custodia costerarum maris ac ejus fœdo. Notatu dignissimæ. 5. 1.

Anno 19. H. 3. 1234. Hamo de Crevequeur et Walrandus Teutonicus, custodes quinque portuum, et totius costeræ maris, a portu de Hastings usque ad portum de Poole. 15. Harl. Manusc. No. 88. p. 43.

No. IV. Supplemental to p. 137.

Anno 15. Ed. 3. 1330. Order of payment to divers men at arms, &c. for the service in guarding of Berwic castle.

Roberto Ingeniatori pro custodia ingeniorum regis, et operum castri et villæ Berwici, a tricesimo die Julii ad primum diem Octobris, 4l. 18s. 10d. Ayfc. Cat. 4584. p. 96.

No. V. Supplemental to the appointments of Sir Robert de Morley and Sir John Montgomery, admirals of the north and west, anno 16. E. 3. p. 25.

Anno 16. E. 3. Robert Morley, Knight, dated April 3d, at Eltham.

Another patent to John Montgomery, Knight, dated April 15, with a clause of indemnity and power to punish the disobedient, “ per captionem bonorum et catallorum suorum in
 “ manum regis, et incarcerationem corporum suorum in manum
 “ regis, et alio modo juxta modum debitorum suorum, casti-
 “ gandi et puniendi nolentes quod idem Johannes occasione
 “ hujusmodi castigationis vel punitonis, per nos vel hæredes
 “ nostros justiciarios, vel alios ministros nostros, vel hæredum
 “ nostrorum, occasionetur in aliquo, seu grave tur,” &c. Ayfc.
 Cat. 4584. p. 416.

No. VI. Supplement to the account Galfred Lord Say, p. 23 ; and to the appointment to the western district of the admiralty, anno 10. E. 3. p. 20. as from the following extract it appears, that the Lord Say was admiral of the west in that year, and probably succeeded Thomas Rotrid, Knight, and not in the 13th year of king Edward the Third, as named in the manuscript. Vespasian, c. 14.

There is something curious and remarkable in the form of this royal order, I give it upon its own authority ; it is copied from Sir John Burrough's Tract. Harl. Manusc. 6274.

Rot. Scotiæ, anno 10. E. 3. 1336. Rex dilecto et fideli suo Galfredo de Say ammirallo flotæ nostræ ab ore aquæ Thamysiæ versus partes occidentales, salutem.

Cum

Cum nuper, &c. Nos animadvertentes quod progenitores nostri, reges Angliæ, Domini maris Anglicani circumquaque, et etiam defensores contra hostium invasions ante hæc tempora extiterunt, et plurimum nos tæderet, si honor noster regius in defensione hujusmodi, nostris (quod absit) depereat temporibus, aut in aliquo minuatur, &c. Mandamus vobis, &c. quod statim visis præsentibus, et absque ulteriori dilatione, naves portuum prædictorum, et alias naves quæ jam paratæ existunt, supra mare teneatis, &c. (without date of day or place). Harl. Manusc. 6274.

No. VII. Supplemental to the account of the new subsidy of 6d. per ton upon all shipping passing the northern coasts, anno 2. Ri. 2di. p. 189. curious as it explains the mode of levying that impost.

Ordained and granted by the advice of the merchants of London, and of other merchants towards the north ; with the assent of all the Commons of Parliament, before the Earl of Northumberland and the Mayor of London ; for the guard of the sea, and of the coasts of the admiraltie of the north with two shippes, &c.

First, to take of every shippe and crager, wheresoever bound, that passeth through the sea within the said admiraltie going and comeing for every ton tight vjd.

Item,

Item, to take of every fishing-veffell which paffeth the fea of the faid admiraltie, for herring of what burthen foever it be, every week of every ton tight vjd.

Item, to take of other fishing fhips and veffells that fifh for other fifh on the fea within the faid admiraltie, of what burthen foever it may be, every three weeks of every tonne tight vjd.

Item, of all other fhippes, cragers and veffails paffing by fea within the faid admiralty, laden with goods of merchants into Sprucia, (ou en espreux) Norway or Sconeland (en North-way ou en Scom, &c.) of every ton tight vjd. Harl. Manufc. 6274.

No. VIII. Supplemental to the fourth year of king Henry the Fourth. This paper is taken likewise from Sir John Burrough's Manuscript Tract. It is defective as being without date of time or place, or fpecification from whence he took it. I give it therefore merely upon its own authority, as it contains the form of a protection granted in fome year of king Henry the Fourth's reign to the fifhermen of France, Holland, Zealand and Frizeland, to take herring within certain limits fpecified.

The King to all our Admirals, &c.

To the end that in this prefent herring feafon, the fifhermen

as

as well of the one part, as on the other, may more safely fish in the sea for herrings, and all other manner of fysh, between the Haven of Scarborough, and the uttermost end of the country of Flanders towards the east; and from thence upon the coast of England, unto the Haven of Southamton; and upon the coast of the kingdom of France, from the said end of all the sayd countrie of Flanders, unto the river of Somme, &c. We will and have ordained and granted, and ordayne and grant by these presents, that all the fishermen of the said partie of France may safely fish for herrings and all other fish during the herring season, and untill the first day of January next comeing, within and between the bounds above limited, &c.

Item, pro hominibus de Holland, Zeland and Frizeland, quod piscari possunt, prope Yarmouth. Harl. Manusc. 6274.

No. IX. Supplemental to the account of John Bottetort, Knt. admiral of the north, anno 8. Ed. 2. 1315.

Rex dilecto et fideli suo Johanni Buttetort custodi maritimæ suæ Jernemouth, salutem.

Quia intelleximus quod multi homines de partibus Holland, Zeland, et etiam Frizeland, qui sunt de amicitia nostra; ad piscandum in mari nostro prope Jernemouth, his diebus sunt venturi: vobis mandamus, quod publice proclamari faciatis
semel

femel vel bis in qualibet septimana, ne aliquis sub omni eo quod nobis forisfacere poterunt, eisdem inferre præsumant injuriam, molestiam, dampnum, impedimentum aliquod aut gravamen: sed ipsis potius cum indiguerint, consulentes sint et auxiliantes; ita quod absque impedimento piscari, et commodum suum facere poterint; prout eis melius videbetur expedire.

In cujus rei testimonium, &c. has literas fieri fecimus patentes usque ad festum Sancti Martini proxime futurum duraturas.

Teste rege apud Wengham, 28 Septembris. Harl. Manusc. No. 6274.

No. ~~X~~. Supplemental to the appointment of the five Lords joint commissioners of the admiralty in 1457. see p. 92.

Rot. Franciæ, anno 32. H. 6. 1457. Protections granted to such of his Majesty's subjects as went in service with his admirals to * * * *.

Thomæ Warren de Bristoll, profecturo in comitativa, &c. Johannis comitis Vigornia, unius custodum maris, super salva custodia et defensione ejusdem.

Ricardo Clerke, in comitativa, &c. Johannis comitis Oxon, unius custodum maris super salva custodia et defensione ejusdem.

Johanni

Johanni Ward, prefecture, &c. in comitiva Ricardi comitis Sarum, unius custodem maris super salva custodia et defensione ejusdem. Harl. Manusc. No. 6274.

No. X. Supplemental to the account of the appointment of Henry Holand Duke of Exeter, Lord High Admiral of England, anno 28. H. 6. 1450. in p. 90.

I have to premise, with regard to the following power, that if there is not a mistake in the date of the year, of 38 for 28, it will prove, that the appointment of the five Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, which from the preceding extract it appears certainly did take place, was superseded; and that Henry Duke of Exeter appointed in the 28th H. 6. was afterwards reinstated in his high office, and probably continued in it until his death.

Rot. Franciæ, anno 31. H. 6. Rex charissimo consanguineo suo Henrico duci Exoniæ, salutem.

Sciatis cum nos retinuerimus vos, sub certis modis et forma, ad proficiscendum in servicio nostro supra mare, super custodia ejusdem, ordiuavimus et assignavimus vos, et tenore præsentium plenam et sufficientem committimus et damus potestatem et auctoritatem generalem, ad proficiscendum supra mare cum retinentia vestra: piratasque, et spoliatores mercatorum

et piscatorum, tam Anglorum quam extraneorum, cum eorum navibus capiendum et arrestandum; eosque juxta casus et juris exigentiam similiter castigandum. Harl. Manusc. No. 6274.

INDEX.

I N D E X.

O R,

G E N E R A L T A B L E

O F T H E

C O N T E N T S O F T H I S V O L U M E.

A.

- A**RRANGEMENT, mode of this work, the Author's reasons for, p. 18.
- Armament naval, 20. H. 6, p. 115, and of 4. H. 5, p. 123.
- Array naval, made at the charge of the ports and towns, p. 180.
- Arrangement of the navy, the general outline nearly the same, from king Edward the Third's to queen Elizabeth's reign, p. 107.
- Armament naval, 20. E. 3. included the greater part of all the shipping of England at that time above thirty tons, p. 353.
- Abstract of the shipping of all England, an. 31. queen Eliz. p. 358.
- Armament naval, 20. E. 3. The account of in Harl. Manusc. No. 78, p. 331—336.
- Ditto, the account of, Harl. Manusc. No. 246, p. 336—349.
- Assessment of poundage subsidies mode of, settled by council, 12. H. 6, p. 237.
- Appellants Lords, the 5 Ls. apts. an. 11. R. 2, and the eight Ls. apts. an. 21. R. 2, their proceedings under the high commission and consequences, p. 54—67.
- Absentees from their service on board ship to forfeit their wages pro tempore, or find a sufficient deputy, p. 121.
- Arrest of ships, mode of, p. 171, ditto at Winchelsea, an. 10. H. 6. p. 316.

I N D E X.

- Arrest of ships at Calais, an. 21. H. 6. 175.
 —Petition of Commons against naval arrests, an. 46. E. 3, p. 176.
 — of shipping or general embargo, 13. E. 3, and an. 19. Eliz.
 p. 177.
 Apſley, Sir Allan, commiſſioner of victualling, an. 20. Jac. p. 218.
 Arcle and Cockham in Holland the Lord of Petition againſt for ſeizing and
 detaining wools of the York merchants, an. 50. E. 3, p. 263.
 Aveſbury's Collections, the groundwork of the enſuing narrative of the
 the campaign, 20. E. 3. their probable authenticity, p. xvii.
 Admiral of England, p. 1, the firſt here noted, an. 15. H. 3, p. 7.
 Admirals of the weſt and north, the firſt, an. 8. Ed. 2, p. 2.
 —Commiſſion and powers at ſea of the admiral of the north and weſt,
 an. 25. E. 3, p. 201.
 Admiralty held in commiſſion, an. 20. H. 6. by Sir John Yver, Sir Ste-
 phen Popham, Miles Stapelton and John Heron, p. 88. and appendix.
 —held in commiſſion by the Earls of Salisbury, Shrewſbury, Wor-
 ceſter, Wiltſhire, and Lord Stourton for life, with ſurvivorſhip, an.
 32. H. 6, p. 92.
 — courts, accroachment of pleas triable at common law, petitioned
 againſt by the weſt, p. 293.
 Alard Garnafius, admiral of the weſt, p. 13.
 Admiralty, warrant of, to arreſt eighteen perſons, by Henry Duke of
 Exeter, an. 32. H. 6, p. 91.
 Affignment of ſubſidies and cuſtoms to be applied to keeping the ſea, an.
 20. H. 6, p. 120, and an. 32. H. 6, p. 92.
 The admiral of England anciently exerciſed as well the authority of the
 board of admiralty as now eſtabliſhed, as likewise the perſonal command
 of the fleet at ſea, p. 200.
 Admiralty courts, Commons petition to enforce ſtatute, reſtraining the
 juriſdiction and powers, an. 2. H. 4, p. 309.
 Aylesford port ſent, an. 20. E. 3. two ſhips, twenty-four mariners, p. 337.
 Admiralty, four joint commiſſioners, ſome particulars of their appoint-
 ment, &c. an. 20. H. 6. Append. p. 368, &c.
 Articles referred to the Judges in the reign of king Edward the Second,
 to enforce la Ley Olyroun Int. p. xxxiii.
 Accord of king Edward the Second, anno regni 14, for an inqueſt to try
 certain piracies and depredations committed upon the ſubjects of the
 Earl of Flanders off Cranden, p. xxxiv.
 Aſton Robert, Knt. admiral weſt, an. 43. E. 3, p. 34, and an. 45,
 p. 39.

Abbot

I N D E X.

Abbot of St. Austin's Canterbury, judgment against him for piracy, p. 235.
 Arundel Richard Earl of, admiral of the west, an. 14. E. 3, p. 24, and
 an. 19. E. 3, p. 25.
 Arundel Richard Fitzalan, junior, Earl of, admiral of the west, an. 1.
 R. 2, p. 40, and an. 10. R. 2, p. 54.

B.

Batayl Robert de, admiral of the west, an. 16. E. 2, p. 18.
 Bard Peter, admiral of the west, an. 12. E. 3, p. 22.
 Barles Edward, admiral of the north, p. 13.
 Blackburn Esq; Nicholas, admiral of the north, an. 7. H. 4, p. 82.
 Ballinger, its complement of mariners, an. 20. H. 6, p. 116.
 Barge, its complement of mariners, an. 20. H. 6, p. 116.
 Ballinger of Britany, dearrested, an. 1. H. 6, p. 231.
 Bambrughe, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, nine mariners, p. 342.
 Barton, 20. E. 3. sent three ships, thirty mariners, p. 345.
 Blackney, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, thirty-eight mariners, p. 347.
 Burton, 20. E. 3. sent five ships, sixty-one mariners, p. 349.
 Baion, 20. E. 3. sent fifteen ships, four hundred and thirty-nine mariners,
 p. 349.
 — ship Cathraine of Bristol sent to advictual Baion, an. 20. H. 6.
 p. 376.
 The benefit of researches of this kind to the public and individuals, p. 11.
 Beauchamp John de, of the Warwick House, admiral of the west, an. 24.
 E. 3. p. 26, and 34. E. 3. p. 29.
 Berwick Castle, provision of artillery for, and its reparation, being in a
 ruinous state, an. 12. H. 6. p. 153—6.
 Bendon Robert, admiral of the west, anno 18. E. 2. p. 18.
 Beauchamp Thomas, Earl of Warwick, admiral of the west, an. 26. E. 3.
 p. 29.
 Beauchamp Thomas, junior, Earl of Warwick, admiral of the north,
 1. R. 2. p. 40.
 Beaumont Sir John, Baron Felkingham, admiral of the north, an. 12.
 R. 2. p. 67.
 Beaufort John, Marquis of Dorset, Earl of Somerset, admiral of the
 north and west, an. 21. R. 2. p. 73.
 — Elected Knight of the Garter, p. 74, petition of the Commons
 and Lords in his favour, p. 75, appointed admiral of England, an. 8,
 H. 4. p. 83.
 Beaufort Thomas, Earl of Dorset, after Duke of Exeter, admiral of the
 north, an. 5. H. 4. p. 79

Berkley

I N D E X.

- Berkley Sir Thomas, Lord B. admiral of the west, an. 5. H. 4. p. 81.
 Beaufort Thomas, Earl of Dorset, after Duke of Exeter, admiral of England, an. 9. H. 4. p. 85.
 Brest Castle, ceded by agreement to king Richard the Second, during the continuance of his war in France, an. 1. R. 2. p. 140.
 Brian Guy, Knight, admiral of the west, an. 44. E. 3. p. 35.
 Bristol petition against their claiming custom of wine discharged at Chepstow, an. 18. R. 2. p. 308.
 — 20. E. 3. sent twenty-two ships, 608 mariners, p. 339.
 Bridgewater, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, fifteen mariners, p. 342.
 Brightlensea, 20. E. 3. sent fourteen ships, 283 mariners, p. 347.
 Bohun William, Earl of Northampton, his appointment, 25. Ed. 3. p. 26.
 and his commission and powers as admiral of the north, p. 202.
 Boyer's information of goods shipped by the Lombards uncustomed and reward, 21. H. 6. p. 250.
 Bottetorte John, admiral of the north, 8. Ed. 2. p. 13. and p. 384.
 Bows, arrows and strings, ordered to purvey a stated quantity for the king's use in his realm of France, p. 157.
 Boston, 20. E. 3. sent seventeen ships, 361 mariners, p. 348.
 Britons Ancient, their navy, Julius Cæsar's account of, p. xxv.
 Burghershe Bartholomew de, admiral of the west, an. 11. E. 3. p. 21.
 Butallers Robert de, admiral of the west, an. 16. E. 2. p. 17.
 Burencester priory, Oxfordshire, exempted from naval array, and the cause, an. 13. E. 3. p. 181.
 Burneaux John, his appeal against the Mayor and city of London, and the award, an. 1. H. 6. p. 280.—282.
 Butler the king's, 4400l. assigned to him, an. 14. E. 3. p. 285.

C.

- Campaign of the, 20. and 21. king Ed. 3. one of the brightest and most glorious æras of the English history, p. xiii.—xvi.
 Cannon proofs, of the use of, in the defence of castles and fortresses, p. 148.
 Causton Robert de, admiral of the north, an. 24. E. 3. p. 26.
 Canterbury, abbot of, condemned by council to restore wines depreyed at sea; p. 235.
 Calais, Gasford boats, with victuals to pay four pence custom only each, p. 294.
 Crains William, Knight, admiral of the west, an. 8. E. 2. p. 13.
 Calville Hugh, Knight, admiral of the south and west, an. 2. R. 2. p. 40.
 Charge of four ships at sea and ten in harbour, an. 6. E. 6. p. 193.
 Council,

I N D E X.

- Council, the Lords of, ab origine judges of captures at sea, p. 233.
- Caleys, the inhabitants of, petition to purchase freely all kinds of merchandize and victuals in England, except staple ware, an. 50. E. 3. p. 263.
- Carmarthen, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, sixteen mariners, p. 142.
- Cambre, where situated, a conjecture, p. 371.
- Cæsar Julius, his account of the navy of the Ancient Britons, p. xxv.
- Credence, Duke of Somerset, to the king and parliament, an. 27. H. 6. p. 140—145.
- Century the sixteenth, authorities derived from, occasionally and introduced here why, p. 193—211.
- Crevequer Hamo de, and Walrandus Teutonicus, joint wardens of the Cinque Ports and coasts, from Hastings to Pool, an. 19. H. 6. p. 379.
- Cherbourg Castle, Lord Hungerford, Governor, demands leave to repair these for its defence, an. 5. H. 6. p. 310.
- Checque books sent to the ports of England for the merchants to enter the quantity and value of their imports and exports, an. 7. H. 6. p. 314.
- Clinton William de, admiral of the west, an. 7. E. 3. p. 19.
- Criol Nicolas, admiral of the west, an. 10. E. 2. p. 14.
- Cliderson Nicholas, Esq; admiral of the west, an. 7. H. 4. p. 82.
- Clinton Edward, Lord Clinton, admiral of England, an. 4. E. 6. p. 103. and a second time, an. 3. and 4. Philip and Mary, p. 104.
- Cinque Ports, their antiquity, privileges, &c. p. 158.
- The services they owe to the king when called upon, p. 159.
- Order for ships, to convey Isabella queen of England to France, an. 1. H. 4. p. 162.
- Order to them to furnish their full proportion of ships and men, 20. E. 3. p. 163.
- Seldom called upon for their full proportion of ships or men, p. 161.
- declining state of, in queen Elizabeth's reign, p. 357.
- Commissioners of the admiralty, 20. H. 6. p. 88. and 369.
- of the admiralty 32. H. 6. p. 89.—377.—384.
- Cobham Reginald de, admiral of the west, an. 18. E. 3. 22. and 23. E. 3. p. 25. and 26.
- Complaints of the English merchants against the masters of Pruce and the Hans towns, an. 14. H. 6. and 20. p. 241. &c.
- Cologne, a merchant and clerk sent there to adjust the above complaint, 21. H. 6. p. 245.
- Commissions granted to certain towns, 2. H. 4. to build barges and ballingers petitioned against, p. 273.
- Commission to sell certain of the king's ships at Southton, 1. H. 6. p. 273. Cloth

I N D E X.

- Cloth exported, the duty, woollen 1s. 2d. worsted one penny, lint 10d.
21. E. 3. p. 286.
- Convoy or safe-conduct of wools at 12d. per sack, engaged for by certain
merchants, 21. E. 3. p. 289.
- Counter petition of John Whittinham and W. Deschinter, p. 291.
- Courts of admiralty holding pleas determinable at common law petitioned
against by the west, p. 293.
- Constable of the Tower's patent to custom wines, oysters, fish, and victuals
coming to London by water, petitioned by the city to be annulled,
p. 293.
- Commissioners of Sewers or Conservation of the rivers Thames, Tees, Ooze
and Trent, petitioned for and granted, 21. E. 3. p. 291.
- Courtney Philip, Knight, admiral of the west, an. 46. E. 3. p. 39. and
an. 3. R. 2. p. 47.
- Courtney Edward, Earl of Devon, admiral of the west, an. 7. R. 2.
p. 52.
- Commons, petition of, relating to the Cinque Ports, an. 13. E. 3. p. 158.
— against arresting the merchants ships, 46. E. 3. p. 176.
- Commission to John Twyer, Thomas Edmond, and John Sorrell, gene-
rally to arrest ships, masters, and mariners, and to victual them, an.
2. E. 4. p. 210.
- Complement of men on board the king's ships, nearly half mariners and
half soldiers, p. 222.
- Council of Regency, fees of the members, an. 2. H. 6. p. 225.
— Forfeitures for every day's absence during term, p. 226.
- Cologne, Embassadors sent to adjust the complaints of the English mer-
chants against the mesne Hans Towns, p. 245.
- Corn, exportation of, limited, an. 15. H. 6. p. 253. may be prohibited,
an. 50. E. 3. p. 301.
- Conduct money allowed to the admiral, an. 4. H. 4. p. 204.
- Contract by indenture with Edward Bareffe, surveyor of all the victuals
for the sea, an. 7. Eliz. p. 212. and other agreements for victualling
and stores, to p. 220.
- Concealment of customers, collectors, sheriffs, and escheators, to be en-
quired into enacted, an. 1. H. 4. p. 293.
- Cogges ware and kersies of Essex and Suffolk to be exempted from the
statute, 47. E. 3. as to length and breadth, an. 50. E. 3. p. 301.
- Coast sea petition of Kent, that the nobles may contribute to the guard of,
an. 2. R. 2. p. 303.

Controllors

I N D E X.

- Controllers and weighers in any port to hold only during the king's pleasure, an. 11. R. 2. p. 306.
- Constable of Dover Castle's jurisdiction that it may be confined to matters within the castle, or done upon the lands belonging thereto, 2. H. 4. p. 309.
- Colchefworth, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, twelve mariners, p. 342.
- Colchester, 20. E. 3. sent twelve ships, 239 mariners, p. 347.
- Customers to dispatch merchants importing wares, and for their price to credit them upon their letters and oaths enacted, 28. E. 3. p. 292.
- Petition that all customers and comptrollers be yearly removed, 2. R. 2. p. 304.
- Canute, King of England, the manner of his asserting the English sovereignty of the seas, p. xxviii.

K.

- Kerfies, the old custom of four pence each petitioned to be revived, an. 14. R. 2. p. 265.
- petitioned that no other custom than three pence upon each, an. 13. R. 2. p. 294.
- Kesteven ports of and the ports of Holland, the Commons petition that the bounds between may be founded and newly made, an. 10. R. 2. 306.
- Kerdiffe, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, fifty-one mariners, p. 342.
- Kyriell Nicholas de, admiral of the north, an. 10. E. 2. p. 14.
- Knight's men at arms, archers, or horses at arms, not to leave the kingdom but from Dover, p. 258.

D.

- Damory Nicholas, takes a Spanish ship, 21. E. 3. and proceedings thereupon, p. 233.
- Drayton Thomas de, admiral of the north, an. 12. E. 3. p. 22.
- Dardus Petrus, admiral of the west, an. 12. E. 3. p. 22.
- Darcy Sir Philip, admiral of the north, an. 9. R. 2. p. 54.
- Darrell Sir Sampson, Commissioner of Victualling, an. 20 Jac. p. 219.
- Darwen, 20. E. 3. sent five ships, ninety mariners, p. 347.
- Deodand, that a casual death on board may not forfeit the whole ship or barge, as a deodand. Petition, 50. E. 3. and 1. H. 4. p. 255.
- Derby Henry Earl of, after he was Duke of Lancaster, his commission and power, as made admiral of the west, an. 25. E. 3. p. 202.
- Declining state of all the shipping of England, probable from the 20. E. 3. to 31. of queen Eliz. p. 354.—356.
- The difficulty of the undertaking, and the author's apology for the attempt, p. i.—vi, &c.
- Diet, by the day allowance for, to the several ranks and degrees in the army, an. 20. E. 3. p. 223.

I N D E X.

- Dover Port, inhibition to any but merchants passing over the sea, but from that port, an. 19. E. 3. p. 258.
 — Anno 20 E. 3. sent sixteen ships, 334 mariners, p. 337.
 Dortmund, 20. E. 3. sent thirty-two ships, 756 mariners, p. 339.
 Dornwicke, 20. E. 3. sent six ships, 102 mariners, p. 347.
 Dudley John, afterwards Viscount Lisley, Earl of Warwick and Duke of Northumberland, admiral of England, &c. an. 34. H. 8. p. 100. and a second time, an. 1. E. 6. p. 103.
 Dunkirk ship protection of, an. 21. H. 6. p. 248.

E.

- Edgar, king of England, collected yearly an immense fleet to scour the British seas of all foreign ships, p. 27. His stile in the Charter of Foundation of Worcester cathedral, p. 27.
 Elmham Sir William, Knt. admiral of the north, an. 3. R. 2. p. 46.
 Embassadors to the general Council, the Bishop of Lincoln and Prior of Sullan made, an. 1. H. 6. p. 275.
 Exeat regno ne, inhibitions, p. 255.—261.
 Exchange bills of the first instance of remittances by, an. 12. H. 6. p. 320.
 Extracts from the Manuscripts, the Author's reasons for giving them, either in copy, purport or version ad libitum, p. xx.
 Embezzlement and concealment of customers, sheriffs or escheators, &c. of the late king Richard the Second's effects, petition of parliament for an enquiry as to, an. 1. H. 4. p. 293.
 Exemption for eight years from all customs, tolls, &c. granted to the Isles of Guernsey, Jersey, Sarke and Aurency, an. 14. R. 2. p. 265.
 ——— for twelve years de Kunagio, Numagio, Portagio, Parmagio, et *Picagio* to the Mayor, &c. of Tenby, 1. H. 6. p. 276.
 Ethelred, king of England, circe 958, his method of raising a navy, p. xxviii.
 Exportation, licence to Bishop of Nantz and other Bretons of certain articles from three ports here to Brittany, 10. H. 6. p. 247.
 Export of corn limited, an. 15. H. 6. p. 253.
 Exportation of woollen yarn prohibited, an. 50. E. 3. p. 262.
 ——— for licence of butter and cheese to any port, an. 18. H. 6. p. 269.
 ——— licence of to merchants of Newcastle, 1000 sacks of wool, an. 1. H. 6. p. 274.
 ——— Licence to merchants of Florence for 300 sacks, and to Earl of Westmoreland 500 sacks, p. 275.
 ——— Prohibited of wool, butter, cheese, sheep, malt or beer, except to Almain and Gascony, to the value of the wine imported, 37. E. 3. p. 296.
 Exmouth, 20. E. 3. sent ten ships, 193 mariners, p. 338.

F.

I N D E X.

F.

- France, three estates of, p. 147.
- Flanders, 20. E. 3. fourteen ships, 133 mariners, p. 349.
- Ferrers Ralph, Knight, admiral of the north, an. 45. E. 3. p. 39.
- Ferrers Thomas, Knight, his indenture to defend and repair Guernsey castle and the Isles of Jersey, Serke and Dureney, p. 135.
- Fees annual or rewards of officers military or civil apportioned to the rank or degree of the holders, p. 225.
- Feoffees under king Henry the Fifth's will to appoint a customer of Southton port, in security for a debt to them from king Henry the Sixth of 6028l. lent, 11 H. 6. p. 317.
- Feversham, an. 20. E. 3. sent two ships, fifty-three mariners, p. 337.
- Fitzwalter Robert, admiral of the north, an. 6. R. 2. p. 48.
- Fitzroy Henry, Duke of Richmond and Somerset, and Earl of Nottingham, admiral of England, &c. an. 17. H. 8. p. 98.
- Fitzwilliam William, Knight, after Earl of Southampton, admiral of England, an. 28. H. 8, p. 99.
- Fynes Edward, Lord Clinton and Say, admiral of England, &c. an. 4. E. 6. and a second time, an. 3. and 4. Philip and Mary, p. 103—4.
- Frize clothes coarse, petition to discharge from subsidies and alnage, an. 51. E. 3. p. 303.
- Forfeiture of ship or cargo, grounds of goods on board uncustomed, p. 249. extenuation of the penalty, an. 2. H. 4. p. 250. that their pardons may be allowed, an. 45. E. 3. p. 297.
- exporting timber or boards for ship-building, an. 15. E. 3. p. 251.
- freighting prohibited goods or to or from prohibited ports, p. 252, &c.
- freighting on foreign bottoms, p. 254.
- a violent or casual death on board, p. 255.
- shipping wools the property of an alien as his own, *ibidem*.
- men at arms passing over seas without licence, p. 256—258.
- No persons whatever except merchants to leave the realm, but from Dover Port, an. 19. E. 3. p. 259.
- Foway, an. 20. E. 3. sent forty-seven ships, 770 mariners, p. 339.
- Froissart's History, the Author's reasons for making use of it, p. xvii.

G.

- Gesford town to pay only four pence custom on every boat of victual they send to Calais, 13. R. 2. p. 294.
- Gaugers of wine in Guienne exact one penny per ton, and yet refuse doing their office, p. 295, another, 4. R. 2. p. 310.
- Grey Richard, Lord Grey of Codnor, admiral of the north, an. 2. H. 4. p. 78.

I N D E X.

- Greville Mr. Fulk, Treasurer of the Navy, in 1599, an. 42. queen Eliz.
p. 218.
- Gripney, the court of, belonging to Dover Castle and the Cinque Ports,
p. 162.
- Grimsbj, 20. E. 3. sent eleven ships, 171 mariners, p. 346.
- Gloucester Duke of his indenture for Calais for nine years, an. 14. H. 6.
p. 147.
- Governor of the merchants strangers to protect their rights, 23. E. 3.
p. 292.
- Gloucester Richard, Duke of, admiral of England, an. 2. E. 4. and again,
an. 11. Ed. 4. p. 94. and 96.
- Gloucester the abbot, with Lord Hastings, delivers the Duke of Somerset's
credence to the king and parliament, an. 27. H. 6. p. 140.
- Gold collars six, twenty-four of silver gilt, and sixty of plain silver pur-
veyed by John Merston at the sum of 100l. and sent to the Emperor to
be distributed in presents at Basil, an. 12. H. 6. p. 322.
- Guns great, used in the defence of castles, but not on ship-board or in the
field, an. 15. E. 3. p. 137. and 379. advantages derived from their in-
troduction and use in the navy to Europe, p. 351.
- Guelderland, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, twenty-four mariners, p. 349.
- Guarantees of the treaties of peace signed at Paris between the kings of
England and France, temp. Ed. 1mi. p. xxxi.

H.

- Hailes Robert, Prior of St. John's Jerusalem, in England, admiral of the
west, 51. E. 3. p. 40.
- Hastings Lord, Chancellor of France, sent over with the Abbot of
Gloucester to deliver the Duke of Somerset's credence to the king and
parliament, p. 140.
- Hampton John, Master of the ordinance ordered, an. 8. H. 6. into
France to survey and arrange the king's ordinance there, p. 148, &c.
- Hans Towns complained of for their treatment of the English merchants,
an. 14. H. 6. p. 241. another petition of the Commons, an. 20. H.
6, p. 243.
- Their merchants dispute the payment of the extra alien duty of
three shillings per ton on wine, an. 1. H. 6, and the award, p. 277—
280.
- Hastings, 20. E. 3. sent five ships, 96 mariners, p. 339.
- Hannil Hoke, 20. E. 3. sent seven ships, 117 mariners, p. 340.
- Hartlepool, 20. E. 3. sent five ships, 145 mariners, p. 343.

Heron

I N D E X:

- Heron John, Esq; joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 20. H. 6. p. 88. 370.
- Herle Robert, Knight, admiral of England, 35. Edw. 3. p. 32.
- History, beneath its dignity to advert to the character and manners of private life, p. iii.
- History of this campaign compiled merely from the actors and cotemporary writers relations, p. xvii.
- Hillary Roger, Justice of the King's Bench, exempted from naval array, an. 13. Ed. 3. and the cause, p. 181.
- Hythe, 20. E. 3. sent six ships, 122 mariners, p. 339.
- Howard John de, admiral of the north, an. 21. E. 3. p. 26.
- Holand John, Earl of Huntindon, admiral of the west, an. 12. and 13. R. 2. p. 68.
- Holland Edmund, Earl of Kent, admiral of England, an. 8. H. 4. p. 83.
- Holand John, Duke of Exeter and Earl of Huntindon, admiral of England, an. 14. H. 6. p. 88.
- Holand Henry, Duke of Exeter and Earl of Huntindon, admiral of England, an. 28. H. 6. p. 90.
- Howard John, Duke of Norfolk, admiral of England, &c. an. 1. R. 3. p. 96.
- Howard Edward, Knt. admiral of England, &c. an. 4. H. 8. p. 97.
- his indenture with the king for that office, p. 203.
- Howard Thomas, Knt. Lord Howard, admiral of England, an. 5. H. 8. p. 98.
- Howard Lord William, after Baron Effingham, admiral of England, an. 1. R. Mariae, p. 103.
- Howard Charles, Baron Effingham, Great Admiral of England for life, an. 27. Eliz. p. 104.
- Hope sent, 20. E. 3. two ships, 59 mariners, p. 337.
- Hoke, an. 20. E. 3. sent eleven ships, 208 mariners, p. 340.
- Holderness, Yorkshire, several ports and towns here swallowed up by the sea, p. 344.
- Hundreds to be sued for the depredation and plundering of the Tewkesbury barges upon the Severn by men of the Forest of Dean, an. 8. H. 6. p. 326.
- Hulle, 20. E. 3. sent sixteen ships, 466 mariners, p. 343.

J. and I.

Inaccuracy in spelling and grammar in ancient manuscript accounted for, p. vii.

Isabella,

I N D E X.

- Isabella, confort of king Richard the Second, her passage by sea to be restored to her father Charles, king of France, p. 162.
- Imprest naval, an. 13. E. 3. and an. 12. R. 2. p. 167—9. Petitions of Parliament against it, p. 169—71.
- Indenture, Duke of Gloucester, for the ward of Calais, an. 14. H. 6. p. 147.
- Indenture of the Earl of Salisbury for the ward of Carlisle, Berwick and the east and west marches towards Scotland, an. 12. H. 6. p. 150 to 157.
- Iver Sir William, joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 20. H. 6. p. 88. 369.
- Indenture between king Edward the Third and Thomas de Ferrars, Knt. for the supply of Guernsey castle, p. 135.
- Imprest naval mode of, an. 21. H. 6. p. 171—5.
- Indenture between queen Elizabeth and Edward Bareffe, as victualler of the navy, p. 212.
- Increase of the royal navy or of the king's own ships, in the sixteenth century, as per lists passim, p. 354, &c.
- Ives St. river of, petition against the erection of three mills upon, an. 51. E. 3. p. 302.
- Ilsercombe ships six, 79 mariners, p. 340.
- Ireland, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, 184 mariners, p. 349.
- Irish petition for a free mutual traffic and intercourse with Portugal, an. 3. R. 2. p. 305.
- Ipswich, 20. 3. E. sent three ships, 62 mariners, p. 347.
- Importation of cloth of gold, jewels or furs, and exportation of staple wares, to find surety of 12s. in the pound to the Tower of London, an. 2. R. 2. p. 304.
- Instructions from the King's Council to the Lords going into France, an. 6. H. 6. so far as relates to the estates or parliaments then held in France and in Normandy, p. 145.
- Judgment of the Lords of the Council against the Abbot of St. Austin for piracy, an. 4. H. 6. p. 235.
- Juries, half foreigners half denizens, in law disputes between merchants strangers and denizens, 20. E. 3. p. 292.
- Jannaye's the petition against their having harboured and assisted the Saracens in their depredations on the Isle of Rhodes, 20. H. 6. p. 246.

L.

- Language ancient of English, or Norman composition its characters, p. vii.
- Lancaster Henry Plantagenet Duke of, admiral of the west, an. 25. E. 3. p. 29. Lancaster

I N D E X.

- Lancaster Thomas Plantagenet de, admiral of England, an. 6. H. 4. p. 81.
 Lancaster John Plantagenet de, Duke of Bedford, admiral of England,
 an. 5. H. 6. p. 85.
 Learning, the state of, before the invention of the press, p. vii.
 Leyburn William, admiral of England, an. 13. Ed. 2. p. 12.
 Leiburn Robert de, admiral of the west, an. 10. E. 2. p. 13.
 Leopel Robert de, admiral of the west, an. 17. E. 3. p. 25.
 Legham Roger de, admiral of the west, an. 8. E. 3. p. 20.
 Letters of Privy Seal to the customers of all the ports to bring in
 their books, rolls, tallies, moneys, &c. to the Exchequer, and to
 stop all payments until the Michalmas ensuing, an. 11. H. 6.
 p. 319.
 Lee port, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 24 mariners, p. 337.
 Lemye, 20. E. 3. sent nineteen ships, 382 mariners, p. 346.
 Lincoln, petition of four counties, that the staple be held there, and not
 at St. Buttolph's, an. 50. E. 3. p. 262.
 Licence to the Chancellor, Privy Seal and Treasurer to grant safe-conduct
 and safeguard to any alien merchants, hostages and prisoners, with their
 servants at discretion, as to continuance of time or number, an. 4. and
 10. H. 6. p. 312.
 Licence to the Marcells, masters of Roan mint to export fifty fadders of
 lead to refine silver there, an. 5. H. 6. p. 313.
 Licence to certain men to go and serve under the king of Denmark, an.
 5. H. 6. p. 313.
 Licence to the Treasurer to give to alien merchants farther time. ad libi.
 Libitum, to pay their customs and subsidies, an. 5. H. 6. p. 314.
 Lyme, 20. E. 3. sent four ships, 62 mariners, p. 337.
 Lymington, 20. E. 3. sent nine ships, 159 mariners, p. 340.
 London Robert de, admiral of the west, &c. an. post 16. Ed. 2. p. 18.
 Loveyn Joffelyn, son and heir of the Duke of Brabant, married Agnes
 Percy and took her name, p. 41.
 Loan to king Edward the Third, an. 14. by certain Bishops, Lords and
 Knights, of 20,000 sack of wool, p. 284.
 Lock at Hambledon and other locks and obstructions upon the Thames,
 the watermen of London petition against, an. 50. E. 3. p. 300.
 London, the city petition that no stranger be a broker or sell merchandize
 there by retail, an. 50. p. 301.
 Lombards falsely pretending to be of the company of Ahertines or of
 Stroze to obtain credit and defraud, petitioned against, an. 50. E. 3.
 p. 302.

London

I N D E X.

London Port supplied to the armament, 20. E. 3. twenty-five ships, 662 mariners, p. 336.

Looe, 20. E. 3. sent twenty ships, 315 mariners, p. 339.

Loans of money for setting forth the armament for Guienne, 20. H. 6. p. 373.

M.

Manuscripts ancient, their simplicity of composition, their uses in tracing facts, successions and rights, and in compiling history, p. x. &c.

March the Earl of, offer to himself or at his option to his deputy, of the Lords of the Regency, an. 1. H. 6. for the Lieutenancy of Ireland, according to their respective degrees and his appointment, p. 226 and 7.

Manny Sir Walter de, admiral of the north, an. 11. and 22. Ed. 3. p. 21, and 26.

Manning the king's ships, proportion of mariners and soldiers in p. 110.

Masters and mariners, their pay and victualling charge, an. 20. H. 6. p. 116.

Mann Olavus king of the Isle of Warden of, the sea-coasts of England, an. 19. H. 3. p. 379.

Masters and mariners that they may be paid wages and for their tackling from their arrest, an. 47. E. 3. p. 298.

——— Petition against outrageous taking of wages of masters or mariners, 14. R. 2. p. 307.

Maydestone sent, an. 20. E. 3. two ships, 51 mariners, p. 337.

Margate sent fifteen ships, 160 mariners, p. 337.

Maldon, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 32 mariners, p. 349.

Merchants of England's petition against the Masters of Pruce and the Hans Towns, an. 14. H. 6. p. 241.

Merchants twelve of Dunkirk licence to land the cargo of the ship Gabriel and to recharge here, p. 248.

Merchants foreign, freely to import and sell in exchange for our wools, an. 28. E. 3. p. 292.

——— customers to dispatch them and credit their letters and oaths for the price of their wares.

——— A governor of such merchants to be appointed, and if aliens in their disputes at law, the Jury to be half foreigners half denizens, p. 292.

Messes, consisting of one Master and twenty mariners each, the number to be supplied by the different Cinque Ports when called upon, p. 160.

Merchants

I N D E X.

- Merchants alien, to give security to buy and export English commodities to half the value of their imports, an. 14. R. 2. p. 265.
- Merchant every, to bring to Calais, one ounce of gold for every sack of wool bought at the staple in England, an. 15. R. 2. p. 265. and an. 20. R. 2. one ounce of gold of foreign coin to the Tower as before, p. 266.
- In disputes between merchants, strangers and denizens, the Jury to be half foreigners and half denizens, an. 28. E. 3. p. 292.
- freely to export the Norfolk single worsted, enacted 13. R. 2. p. 294.
- none to be impeached of overplus of weight after the king's customers have weighed the same, an. 13. R. 2. p. 294.
- none to buy less than 100 tons of wine in Gascony, an. 4. E. 3. p. 298.
- English petition to be answered of the Scotch goods here for their goods taken in Scotland, an. 26. E. 3. p. 305.
- Petition to have the act of 20. R. 2. repealed relating to bullion, an. 21. R. 2. p. 308.
- Mersey (Isle) 20. E. 3. sent thirteen ships, 303 mariners, p. 347.
- Morley Robert de, admiral of the north, an. 13. E. 3. p. 22. and an. 14. 15. and 16. E. 3. p. 24. and 25.
- Monte Gonrico de John, admiral of the west, an. 16. E. 3. and an. 21. E. 3. p. 25. and p. 380.
- Moleton, Moulton or Molton, Knight, or Muleton Thomas de, admiral of England, an. 48. H. 3. p. 8. 378.
- Morley John de, admiral of the north, an. 21. E. 3. p. 26.
- Montague William, Earl of Sarum, admiral of the west, 50. E. 3. p. 39.
- Montorment sent 20. E. 3. two ships, 23 mariners, p. 337.
- Mullbroke, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, twelve mariners, p. 342.

N.

- Navy of England the general state of, at different periods from Julius Cæsar's descent on this island to the reign of king Edward the Third, p. xxiv.
- Anno 26. E. 3. all nations held the King Lord of the sea, p. 176.
- Navy maintained or kept by certain customs specifically appropriated, and assigned, p. 187, and p. 192,
- Such customs imposed without assent of parliament, an. 20. E. 3. complained of, p. 187.

I N D E X.

- Navy, customs granted by parliament, an. 11. R. 2. and 31. H. 6. for the king's life, p. 187.
- a new impost of 6d. per ton on every ship passing for keeping Scarborough, p. 188, and 381.
- general observations relating to the, and its decay, p. 354, &c.
- maintenance of, petitioned for by the Commons, 16. Ri. 2. p. 293.
- causes of the decay of, three principally, 45. E. 3. and 46. E. 3. p. 297.
- English constitution of, general outline nearly the same, from the reign of king Edward the Third to queen Elizabeth's, p. 107.
- No considerable navy of king's ships nor of larger size than a thousand tons, nor of a stronger construction for war merely, kept up during that period of 270 years, p. 110. 353, &c.
- English list of, an. 4. H. 5. 1415. p. 113.
- and ordinance of, an. 20. H. 6. 1441. p. 115.
- in the Thames, not in commission, an. 9. H. 8. 1517. p. 122.
- ships for the summer season, an. H. 8. their tonnage, with their complement of soldiers, gunners and mariners, p. 123.
- ships for the winter season, with ditto, an. H. 8. p. 124.
- in the beginning of queen Elizabeth's reign, with ditto, p. 125.
- another list, circiter an. 31. Elizabethæ, 1588, with ditto, p. 197.
- Navy, method of raising a navy adequate to the emergency,
- first, by summons to the Cinque Ports, p. 132.
- proclamations of ditto, p. 162, &c.
- secondly, by summons to other particular ports or the ports in general, p. 132.
- proclamation, of ditto, p. 164, &c.
- thirdly, by naval imprest, p. 133.
- proclamations of ditto, p. 164, &c.
- Navy surveyor's report of the state of all the ships, an. 6. E. 6. p. 194.
- Navy receipts and disbursements, Accountant General's statement of, for six years, 1589 to 1594, p. 196.
- Navy expenditure, an. 4. H. 4. 1415. p. 191.
- an. 8. H. 6. 1429. p. 192.
- an. 20. H. 6. p. 1441. p. 192.
- Navy estimate of rigging, stores, victualling the English fleet, circ. an. 1600, an. 43. queen Eliz. p. 218.
- Navy of England general observations upon, p. 350. to 368.
- Navy of England, the ancient state of, contrasted with the present, p. 365.

I N D E X.

- Nantz, Bishop of, and others licence to export to Britanny certain articles,
an. 10. H. 6. p. 247.
- Neville John, Knt. Baron of Raby, admiral of the north, an. 44. E. 3. p. 34.
- Neville William, Knt. admiral of the north, an. 46. E. 3. p. 39.
- Neville Richard Earl of Warwick and Sarum, joint commissioner of the
admiralty, an. 32. H. 6. p. 92, and 334. mentioned as appointed ad-
miral, but no date of year or appointment in Otho, E. ix. p. 93.
- Neville William, Earl of Kent, and B. Falconberg admiral of England,
2. E. 4. p. 95.
- Neville Richard, Earl of Warwick and Sarum, admiral of England, an.
49. H. 6. p. 95.
- Newmouth, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 18 mariners, p. 339.
- Newcastle upon Tyne, 20. E. 3. sent twenty-seven ships, 314 mariners,
p. 343.
- Norwich John de, admiral of the north, an. 8. and 10. E. 3. p. 20.
- Norwich merchants may export their fingle worsteds without reserve, 13.
R. 2, p. 294.
- Norfolk John Duke of, admiral of England, an. 1. R. 3. p. 96.
- Normandy, three estates of, p. 144. 145.
- ruinous state of the English forts there, p. 143.
- North fleet, an. 20. E. 3. returned from 31 ports, &c. 217 ships, 4521
mariners, p. 349.
- fleet of foreign ships returns thirty-seven ships, 827 mariners, p.
349.
- Nonchethe sent, 20. E. 3. five ships, 49 mariners, p. 337.

O.

- Olarus, king of the Isle of Mann made, warden or admiral of the sea-
coasts, an. 19. H. 3. p. 379.
- Order to provide cannon, stone balls, &c. for Brest castle, an. primo Rl.
2. p. 139.
- de accelerando arrestationem navium, 20. E. 3. p. 205.
- to certain Masters of ships to arrest Masters and mariners for the
fleet, an. 2. Ed. 4. p. 208.
- to certain commissioners de superintendendo the arrest of ships,
Masters and mariners for the fleet and its supply of rigging, tackling
and victuals, an. 2. E. 4. p. 210.
- Ordinance made at Hastings, an. 2. Regis Johannis, p. xxxv.

I N D E X.

- Ordinance in France surveyed, &c. by John Hamton, Master of the king's ordinance by commission, an. 8. H. 6. p. 148—150.
- Ordinance lesser, purveyance of bows, quivers of arrows and strings for the defence of the English possessions in France, an. 10. H. 6. p. 157.
- Ordinance for the keeping of the navy, an. 20. H. 6. p. 115—122.
- Ordinance office in the Tower its fixed ordinary expenditure in the reigns of the Edwards, p. 137.
- Ordinance great of the kings, conveyed by ships impressed from Sandwych to the Tower of London, an. 16. E. 3. p. 138.
- Order of naval imprest to convey 200 stone balls for the cannon from Folkeston quarry to the Tower of London, p. 139.
- Officers superior and inferior the number and pay in a ship of 250 mariners in queen Elizabeth's reign, p. 198.
- Offices, appointments to of, admiral and marshal, an. 21. R. 2. notified by the king to parliament, p. 308.
- Ooze commissioners of conservancy of the river of, petitioned for, 21. E. 3. p. 291.
- Orford, 20. E. 3. sent thirteen ships, 303 mariners, p. 347.

P.

- Pay in the navy, the Lord Admiral and his lieutenant only at a stated annual fee, p. 189.
- The Masters and mariners only paid at the strictly marine rate and what, p. 222.
- The Captains, Under-captains, Knights, Esquires, men at arms and archers serving on board, paid at the land rate and what, p. 223.
- Pay of the admiralty establishment per annum, p. 190, the Lord Admiral, total expence of the navy, an. 4. H. 4. p. 191, ditto, 20. H. 6. p. 116. and ditto, 8. H. 6, p. 192.
- Pay of all offices civil, military and naval, apportioned to the rank and not the duties of the respective offices, p. 224. pay of Lords of Council, 2. H. 6. p. 225. agreement of terms conditional for the Lieutenancy of Ireland, p. 227.
- Pay of the Welch soldiers, one 3d. less than of the English, p. 224.
- Parliaments held in Normandy and in France, an. 9. H. 6, p. 145, &c.
- Passage free over sea to all paying half a mark petition for, 21. E. 3. p. 259.
- Plantagenet Thomas, after Duke of Clarence, admiral of England, an. 6. H. 4. p. 81.
- Plantagenet Richard, brother to king Edward the Fourth, admiral of England, an. 2. E. 4. p. 94. appointed again, an. 11. E. 4. p. 96.
- Palmer Sir Henry, Comptroller of the Navy, an. 1600, p. 218.

Passage

I N D E X.

- Passage warrant for payment of the Duke of Bedford and retinue to France, 5. H. 6. p. 310.
- Payment warrant for of 10,000 marks to William Leventhorp and William Burgh, Tellers of the Exchequer, to be remitted to the king in France, an. 10. H. 6, p. 316.
- Prefs, the advantages of, p. ix.
- Period of king Edward the Third's reign laid the foundation of our national glory in arms, and the outline of our present constitution, p. xiii.
- Perbran John de, admiral of the north, an. 10. and 16. E. 2, p. 17, &c.
- Perbran Thomas de, admiral of the north, an. 1. Ed. 3, p. 19.
- Percy Thomas, Knt. admiral of the north, an. 2. R. 2. p. 40. and an. 8. R. 2. p. 53.
- Percy family of, its different branches, Tadcaster, Warram, p. 42. Lennington and Killdale in Yorkshire, 43, its superior weight and pre-eminence there, an. 13. E. 3. p. 43.
- Percy Thomas, married the daughter and coheir of David Strabolgie Earl of Athol, in whose right Henry his son became Earl of Athol, p. 46.
- Percy Henry Earl of Northumberland, admiral of the north, an. 7. R. 2. p. 52.
- Percy Thomas Earl of Worcester, admiral of England, an. 22. R. 2. p. 77.
- Petition of the Commons against taking up the merchants ships, an. 46. E. 3. p. 176.
- Pettiwacche or guard of the sea-coasts, p. 180. and 183.
- Petition of the Commons against the treatment of the English merchants in the Mefne Hans Towns, an. 14. H. 6. p. 241.
- another, an. 20. H. 6. p. 243.
- to Parliament against the Janneyes for assisting the Saracens in committing depredations upon the Isle of Rhodes, an. 20. H. 6. p. 246.
- of the Commons to repeal commissions to towns to build ships granted without assent of parliament, an. 2. H. 4. p. 273.
- Preston Christopher remits to the king 850l. upon delivery to him of 50 of the king's prisoners in the Tower, an. 1. H. 6. p. 276.
- Petition of Commons that the king take only two tons of wine as prise out of every ship coming into port English, an. 1. H. 4. p. 282.
- of the Commons against Tyddeman's engrossing all the tin of Cornwall, 21. E. 3. p. 286.
- against the new custom upon cloths exported as specified, an. 21. E. 3. p. 287.

Petition

I N D E X.

- Petition against forestallers, regrators, hostellers, &c. of wares, fish, wine, and corn, 35. E. 3. p. 296.
- Prizes taken at sea how to be divided, 20. H. 6. p. 224. and an. 4. H. 8. p. 204. and 229. and commissioners appointed to adjust the division, and to compose a mutiny and secession of part of the fleet, an. 13. E. 3. p. 228.
- Piracy, mode of proceeding against if by the king's subjects, p. 230. and 235. — if by foreigners, p. 237. and 239.
- Privy Council ab origine the ultimate judges in prize causes, p. 232.
- Printed book, meaning of that expression in the records, and mode of passing statutes in the fourteenth century, p. 249.
- Prices of a variety of implements and other articles for the navy in queen Elizabeth's reign, p. 220.
- Prisoners, the admiral to answer one half to the king for all taken, an. 4. H. 8. p. 205.
- warrant of delivery of fifty prisoners in the Tower to Christopher Preston in discharge of 850l. an. 1. H. 6. p. 276.
- the Duke of Aurelian his Wardship given to Sir Thomas Cumberworth, at twenty shillings per day, for the same Wardship, id. ibid.
- Plymouth, 20. E. 3. sent twenty-six ships, 603 mariners, p. 339.
- Procurators of the maritime states of Europe towards contraventions of the treaty of peace between England and France, tempore Edwardi primi, p. xxix.
- Ports, general summons to provide shipping to assemble at a day and port named, p. 164.
- Pomadre, or probably gunpowder, the purveyance of thirty-two tons remitted to Thomas de Brockhull, p. 137.
- the purveyance of thirty tons for Jersey castle, engaged for by Thomas Ferrers, Knt. p. 136.
- Popham Sir Stephen, joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 20. H. 6. p. 88. and 369.
- Prohibition to export timber for ship-building, 15. E. 3. p. 251.
- to export woollen cloths, except by the merchants of Prussia and Portugal, 15. H. 6. p. 252.
- to export corn when above 6s. and 8d. per quarter wheat, and three shillings barley, 15. H. 6. p. 253.
- to English merchants to export in foreign bottoms their goods, 15. R. 2. p. 254.
- Pole Michael de la, Knt. admiral of the north, an. 51. E. 3. p. 39.
- Pole William de la, Marquis and Earl of Suffolk, admiral of England, &c. an. 25. H. 6. p. 89.

Proclamation

I N D E X.

- Proclamation to the Sheriff of Essex, &c. to supply the fleet with certain naval stores, an. 14. E. 3. p. 135.
- Ports western supplied seventy ships to the armament, an. 13. E. 3. p. 165.
- Protection of a ship, cargo, &c. of Dunkirk, an. 2. H. 6. p. 248.
- Proclamations ne exeant regno made by the Sheriffs of London, 16. E. 3. p. 256.
- by the Sheriff of Kent, &c. an. 4. E. 3. p. 257.
- by the Warden of the Cinque Ports, p. 258.
- by the Sheriff of Kent ne exeant ulli nisi de portu Dover, an. 19. E. 3. p. 259.
- Protection form of, tem. H. 4. to the fishermen of France, within certain limits, p. 382.
- Dirto to those of Holland, Zealand and Switzerland to fish off Yarmouth, ibid.
- Protection to five Lords, &c. going over into France, an. 1. H. 6. p. 276.
- to the Flemish merchants, their factors, &c. to trade throughout England, and the same to the merchants of Holland and Zealand, an. 6. H. 6. p. 314.
- to Castilian Embassadors and their retinue, an. 7. H. 6. and the same to the counsellors and principal officers going over into France, an. 8. H. 6. p. 315.
- Power to the Duke of Bedford to export gold, silver, jewels, in ingots, or plate, ad libitum, during his regency in France, an. 10. H. 6. p. 316.
- to the Archbishop of York, Embassador to the Pope and general council, to carry out 2000l. in corn and 500 marks in plate or mafs, an. 11. H. 6. p. 318.
- Portsmouth, 20. E. 3. sent five ships, 96 mariners, p. 339.
- Poole, 20. E. 3. sent four ships, 94 mariners, p. 340.
- Potterickstone, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 27 mariners, p. 341.
- Polerwan, sent one ship, 61 mariners, p. 341.

R.

- Radyngton John, Prior of St. John's of Jerusalem in England, admiral of the west, an. 8. R. 2. p. 54.
- Ravensec, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, 27 mariners, p. 344.
- Restitution of a Breton ballinger assigned to John Stafford Privy Seal, an. 1. H. 6. p. 232.
- of a Spanish ship and condemnation of the cargo taken by Nicholas Damory, an. 21. E. 3. p. 233.
- Restitution of wines pirated at sea by the Abbot of Canterbury, 4. H. 6. p. 235. Restitution

I N D E X.

Restitution of a galley of Catalonia, by order of Council, an. 5 H. 6. p. 236.

—— application for restitution of the Salwe ship and cargo to the Earl of Flanders, an. 4. E. 3. p. 237.

—— a like demand to William Earl of Hainault of Stephen Allen's ship, an. 4. E. 3. p. 239.

Rempton Sir Thomas, admiral of the west, an. 2. H. 4. Constable of the Tower and Knight of the Garter, and his death, p. 78.

Retaliation mode of, on refusal of ships unjustly taken by any foreign power, p. 238.

Reynewell John, Mayor of the staple of Calais, his speech before Council, 9. H. 6. p. 268.

Rival Peter de, admiral of England, Treasurer and Chamberlain of the Exchequer, 15. H. 3. p. 7.

Rye, 20. E. 3. sent nine ships, 156 mariners, p. 339.

Roxborough Castle, for its reparation and purveyance of artillery, 100l. allowed by the Council, an. 12. H. 6. p. 150.

Rotrid Thomas, admiral of the west, an. 10. Ed. 3. p. 20.

Russell William de, admiral of the north, an. 17. E. 3. p. 25.

Rupibus John de, admiral of the west, an. 5. R. 2. p. 48. and an. 12. R. 2. p. 71.

Rutland Edward Plantagenet Earl of, and of Cambridge, admiral of England, an. 15. R. 2. p. 72.

Russell John, Eques auratus, Lord Russell, admiral of England, &c. an. 32. H. 8. p. 100.

Rhodes the Isle of, depredations committed there by the Saracens and the Janneyes complained of, an. 20. H. 6. p. 246.

Rumney, 20. E. 3. sent four ships, 65 mariners, p. 339.

S.

State of king Henry the Sixth's dominions in France the twenty-seventh year of his reign, p. 140—145.

Salisbury Earl of, appointed Warden of the east and west marches towards Scotland, an. 12. H. 6. p. 150. joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 32. H. 6. p. 92.

Stains Galfred, admiral of the west, an. 10. E. 3. p. 21.

Say Galfredus Dominus de, admiral, an. 13. vice —, p. 23. and an. 10. E. 3. p. 380.

Stapylton Miles, Esq; joint commissioner of the admiralty, 20. H. 6. p. 88. 369.

I N D E X.

- Shares dead mens allowed in a ship of 1000 tons, an. 4. H. 3. p. 204.
- Statutes, the mode of passing and meaning of the words printed book in the records, p. 249.
- Salmon destruction of, and erection of mills, wiers, &c. on rivers that the statute made against may be observed, enacted, 25. E. 3, p. 296.
- Salmon, regulations for the preservation of, 31. E. 3. p. 299.
- Staple revoked, an. 8. E. 3, p. 283.
- The statute fixing the staple at particular towns, an. 27. E. 3, p. 261.
- The same confirmed, an. 29. E. 3, p. 262.
- Staple ware, the king allowed by parliament to export to any port besides Caley, for a time, an. 5. R. 2, p. 263, and in consequence the staple opened to all merchants whatever, p. 264.
- Enacted that the staple shall be holden in England, an. 9. R. 2, p. 264, and an. 14. R. 2. and an. 1. H. 4. removed to Calais, p. 266. Provisions enacted for the staple at Calais, an. 27. H. 6. p. 270.
- Sandwyck Port, king Edward the Third with his armament 1345. July 3d. embarked at and set sail for France, p. 329.
- sent an. 20. E. 3. twenty-two ships, 504 mariners, p. 337.
- Swansea, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, 29 mariners, p. 340.
- Salt fleet, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 49 mariners, p. 345.
- Scardborough, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, 19 mariners, p. 347.
- Spain, 20. E. 3. sent seven ships, 184 mariners, p. 349.
- Spelling the uncertainty of in ancient manuscripts accounted for, p. viii.
- Shrewsbury John Talbot Earl of, joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 32. H. 6. p. 92.
- Seymour Thomas (de Sancto Mauro,) Lord Admiral of England, &c. an. 1. E. 6. p. 102.
- Sea-coasts, Petition of the Commons that persons holding lands there should reside upon the same, an. 13. E. 3. p. 182.
- Sea-coast guard of, Commons petition that it be made at the king's charge as promised, p. 182.
- That such as are charged should be discharged from the land array, p. 183.
- That the guard called Pettiwacche may be reduced one half, p. 184.
- Severn, that obstructions upon that river may be removed, 46. E. 3. p. 298.
- another petition, an. 51. E. 3. p. 303. new taxes imposed by Bristol, Chepstow, Worcester and Gloucester, the counties of Salop, Stafford and Herefordshire petition against, 2. H. 4. p. 309.

I N D E X.

- Seton, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 25 mariners, p. 337.
- Sea-ports and towns several on the coast of Holderness in Yorkshire, as Fishmark, Upsall, Potterfleet, Tharlethorpe, Redwaye, and Pennythorpe, swallowed up by the sea, p. 344.
- Ships different rates of, their complement of men, an. 23. H. 6. p. 126.
- Ships taken from the enemy not to be disperbled or divided until condemned as prizes, within six months, p. 118.
- One with goods therein, how departed and shared, p. 119.
- Captains or men absent from their ships to be disallowed their wages for the time, unless they appoint deputies approved, p. 121.
- Owners of ships taken into the king's service allowed 3s. and 4d. per ton, for every three months, p. 171.
- Ships raised by summons manned and victualled at the charge of the ports and from the day of junction with the admiral taken into the king's pay, p. 164.
- Ships, old commission, to sell at Southampton, 1. H. 6. p. 273.
- Ships freighted with wine, the king to have from each only two tons prize, p. 282.
- Spigurnell Ralph, admiral of England, an. 38. E. 3. p. 35.
- Ships great with four stages their complement of mariners, an. 20. H. 6. each, to be attended with a ballinger, a barge, and a spinace, p. 114.
- Spinace, its complement of mariners, an. 20. H. 6. p. 116.
- Ship's charge of four at sea and ten in port, an. 6. E. 6. p. 193.
- Shipping, Surveyor's report of the state of, an. 6. E. 6. p. 194.
- Ships put into commission every year for eight months, or a lesser time only, as wanted, p. 220.
- Ship Spanish, Sir Nicholas Damory's prize, an. 21. Ed. 3. how adjudged and disposed of, p. 233.
- Ship of Catalonia de-arrested and discharged, an. 5. H. 6. p. 236.
- Ship Salwe of London, captured by Flemish pirates, restitution demanded, an. 4. E. 3. p. 237.
- Shipping of England decline of, an. 31. Queen Eliz. p. 358.
- the greater part of included in the armament, 20. E. 3. p. 354.
- Ships of the king's, an. 20. E. 3. are twenty-five, 409 mariners, p. 336.
- Sidemouth, 20. E. 3. sent three ships, 62 mariners, p. 338.
- Swyn fleet, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, 11 mariners, p. 345.
- Swyn Humber, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 32 mariners, p. 349.
- Somerfet Duke of, his account of English possessions in Normandy, an. 27. H. 6. p. 140.
- Stourton John Lord, joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 32. H. 6. p. 92.
- Storchouse

I N D E X.

- Storehouses naval four, viz. at Radcliffe, Rochester, Portsmouth and Dover, for victualling the navy, an. circ. 7. Queen Eliz. p. 213.
- Scot Robert, Lieutenant of the Tower of London, an. 1. H. 6. p. 278.
- South fleet, 20. E. 3. from fifty ports returned 493 ships, 9030 mariners, p. 342.
- Shoram, 20. E. 3. sent twenty ships, 329 mariners, p. 339.
- Soforde, 20. E. 3. sent five ships, 80 mariners, p. 339.
- Southampton, 20. E. 3. sent twenty-one ships, 576 mariners, p. 340.
- Stockhythe, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, ten mariners, p. 345.
- Study of ancient manuscripts, its difficulties and discouragements, Intr. p. ii. and iii.
- Its benefits and advantages, Intr. p. v.
- Suffolk Robert de Ufford Earl of, admiral of the north, an. 18. and 19. Ed. 3. p. 25.
- Subsidy of poundage, mode of assessing settled by Council, 12. H. 6. p. 287.
- Sturmy John, admiral of the north, an. 18. E. 2. p. 18.
- Stuart Charles, Duke of York, in reversion admiral of England, &c. an. 9. Jacobi, p. 105.
- Surveyors of the English navy's report of the state of the ships, an. 6. E. 6. p. 194.
- Subsidy of wine, petition to fix it at twenty pence per ton, 16. R. 2. p. 307.
- Swansea, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, twenty-nine mariners, p. 340.
- Swyn fleet, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, eleven mariners, p. 345.
- Swyn Humber, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, thirty-two mariners, p. 349.

T.

- Traytor Thomas de, admiral of the north, an. 12. Ed. 3. p. 22.
- Thames, commission of conservancy for the river of, granted, 21. E. 3. p. 291.
- Tamworth Nicholas, Eques auratus, admiral of the north, an. 43. E. 3. p. 34.
- Trade free of wool, some counties petition for between Normandy and Southton, 17. R. 2. p. 308.
- Taxes new imposed upon the navigation of the river Severne, petition against, 2. H. 4. p. 309.
- Trussell William de, admiral of the west, an. 13. E. 3. p. 23.
- Trent and Tees, commission of conservancy of the rivers of, granted, 21. E. 3. p. 291.
- Treasurer of the navy's statement of receipts and disbursements for six years, from 1589 to 1594, an. 37. Eliz. p. 196.

I N D E X.

- Treasurer of the navy's account for the thirty-first year of Queen Elizabeth, p. 197.
- Trevor Mr. John, Surveyor of the Navy, 1599, an. 42. Eliz. p. 218.
- Teutonicus Walrandus and Hamo de Crevequeur, joint Wardens of the Cinque Ports, and the coasts from Hastings to Poole, an. 19. H. 3. p. 379.
- Treasurer of England, to buy 222 sarplars of wool for-purveyance of 5000 marks to the Chancellor of France, an. 13. H. 6. p. 268.
- Tenby the Mayor of, &c. obtain an exemption de omni Kunagio, &c. for twelve years, an. 1. H. 6. p. 276.
- Treasurer of England's power of respiting the time for alien merchants to bring in their proportions to the bullion at the Tower, 11. H. 6. p. 318.
- Tewkesbury the boats of, upon the Severn depreyed and plundered by the people of the Forest of Dean, &c. and proceedings to be had there-upon, an. 8. H. 6. p. 323.—329.
- Teymouth, 20. E. 3. sent seven ships, 120 mariners, p. 338.
- Teynmouth, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 25 mariners, p. 339.
- Trivet Sir Thomas, Knt. admiral of the west, an. 9. R. 2. p. 54.
- Tin, petition against Tydemans engrossing it, p. 286.
- that the vent be at Leftwithial and not at Calais, 17. R. 2. p. 307.
- Tonnage and poundage appropriated to the keeping of the sea, p. 119.
- Tonnage of the shipping of England, an. 31. Q. Eliz. an imperfect estimate of, and of the 20. E. 3. and both contrasted with the present, p. 358.
- Truffell William, Knt. admiral of the west, an. 13. E. 3. p. 23.

U. and V.

- Ufford William, Earl of Suffolk, admiral of the north, an. 50. E. 3. p. 39.
- Vagnors Wakefius de, admiral of the west, an. 1. E. 3. p. 19.
- Vere John de, Earl of Oxford, admiral of England, an. 1. H. 7. p. 97-384.
- Victuallers attending the ships, their tonnage and complement of mariners in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, p. 125. ditto, circ. an. 49. Q. Eliz. p. 130.
- Victualler of the navy Edward Barosse, his indenture, p. 212.
- Price per head in five years of Queen Elizabeth's reign, p. 213.
- Allowance per head and price of victualling a crew of thirty-two men, temp. Eliz. p. 216.
- Contract for victualling ships in harbour, an. 40. Q. Eliz. p. 217.
- Office

I N D E X.

Office of Surveyor-general of the Victualling, held by commission by Allan Apsley, Sir Sampson Darrell, &c. 20. Jac. p. 218.

Victualling contracts for Edinburgh and Striveling castles, an. 13. E. 3. p. 283.

— for Berwick castle in the same year, p. 284.

Victory naval in the water of Swine, an. 14. E. 3. reported to parliament by the king's messengers the Earl of Arundel and Sir William Trussell, p. 284.

W.

Wattchee petit, a guard to defend the coasts by land and sea, p. 180.

— Part of Oxfordshire and Bucks liable to be assessed to naval array, p. 181.

— Petition that persons having lands within six miles of the sea reside there for the defence, and that the king should take this charge upon himself and discharge his people, p. 182.

— And that the Pettiwacche guard should be lessened one half, p. 184.

Wafting their goods, the merchants petition that the payment for of 12d. per sack of wool, vide p. 287, may cease, an. 25. E. 3. p. 295.

Warham, 20. E. 3. sent three ships, 59 mariners, p. 340.

Wadworth, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, fourteen mariners, p. 341.

Wainflete, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 49 mariners, p. 346.

Weymouth port, an. 20. E. 3. sent fifteen ships, 263 mariners, p. 337.

Wiltshire James Earl of, joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 32. H. 6. p. 92.

Wine ships of, Commons petition the king to take only two tons from each, an. 1. H. 4. as prize, p. 282.

Wine officers for gauging in Guienne, neglect doing their office and yet take 1d. per ton, p. 295. and 4. R. 2. p. 310.

Wight Isle of, petition remedy for its desertion, through losses and payments, an. 2. R. 2. p. 303.

Winchester Bishop of, leave to export and sell 800 sacks of wool in France, 5. H. 6. p. 311.

Wight Isle of, 20. E. 3. sent thirteen ships, 220 mariners, p. 337.

Winchelsea sent twenty-one ships, 396 mariners, p. 337.

Withanes, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, six mariners, p. 347.

Wight Isle of, the commissioners Sir William Popham and Sir William Sopur to take the muster of the armament, 20. H. 6. there, Append p. 370.

Worcester,

I N D E X.

- Worcester John Earl of, joint commissioner of the admiralty, an. 32. H. 6. p. 92. and 384.
- Woollen yarn, to be employed in draping and not exported but in the cloth only, an. 50. E. 3. p. 262.
- Wool, 36 sarplars seized and detained by the Lord of Arcle and Cockam in Holland, an. 50. E. 3. p. 263.
- Wool, no person to buy any before the king be served; different contracts for, and the price, p. 285. and 6.
- 500 sacks assigned to E. Phillippe, to pay her debts, p. 286.
- Loan to the king from certain Bishops, Lords and Knights of 20,000 sacks, p. 285.
- Wool, exaction of two marks per sack above the custom and subsidy by two merchants farmers of the subsidy, an. 21. E. 3. petitioned against and a counter petition of the two merchants John Whetenham and Walter Deschariter, p. 290.—91.
- Commons petition against the five northern counties transporting their wool into Scotland, 2. R. 2. p. 304.
- that every constable may have the weighing of wools, an. 13. R. 2. p. 306
- Petition to repeal all the annuities assigned upon the subsidy of wool, an. 2. H. 4. p. 309.
- Wollriche, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, twelve mariners, p. 343.
- Wodhouse, 20. E. 3. sent one ship, twelve mariners, p. 345.

Y.

- Yarmouth Great charter of, that none buy herring within seven miles may be repealed, an. 50. E. 3. p. 300, its charter confirmed, an. 2. R. 2. p. 304.
- Charter Norfolk and Suffolk, petition the revocation of, an. 4. R. 2. p. 305.
- revoked by statute, an. 5. R. 2. its liberties confirmed, an. 10. R. 2. p. 306.
- Yalme, 20. E. 3. sent two ships, 47 mariners, p. 339.
- Yarmouth, 20. E. 3. sent forty-three ships, 1950 mariners, p. 347.
- York Charles Stuart Duke of, admiral of England, &c. in reversion during life, an. 16. Jacobi, p. 105.
- York, an. 20. E. 3. sent one ship, nine mariners, p. 344.

F I N I S.

The Table of ERRATA, the first Column denotes the Page; the second, the Line; re. for read; de. for dele; vi. for vice, or instead of.

Page.	Line.		Page.	Line.	
iv	9	<i>read</i> deferring <i>vice</i> referring	157	18	<i>re.</i> goodly haste, order, &c.
	10	<i>dele</i> is, and l. 18. <i>de.</i> an	160	7	<i>re.</i> hommes
v	7	<i>re.</i> there, <i>vi.</i> these	161	23	<i>re.</i> No. 14. p. 64.
vi	11	<i>re.</i> the records	163	11	<i>re.</i> Catal. <i>vi.</i> MSS.
2	18	<i>re.</i> west, <i>vi.</i> south	164	3	<i>re.</i> nullatenus
8	9	<i>re.</i> traces	166	16	<i>re.</i> garnir
9	1	<i>re.</i> nostrum	167	12	<i>re.</i> 1388
15	2	<i>re.</i> Ernemouth	169	5	<i>re.</i> liberaverit & custodiri in the next line
18	16	<i>re.</i> west <i>vi.</i> north		10	<i>re.</i> Aysc. Cat. v. Harl. MSS.
	19	<i>re.</i> north <i>vi.</i> west	171	12	<i>re.</i> Anno tertio R. 2di.
21	1	<i>de.</i> that and add it at the end of the line	174	3	Article 10. <i>vi.</i> anno
	16	<i>re.</i> A. D. instead of the first no date	181	3	<i>read</i> dilecti et l. 6. <i>re.</i> iidem
22	6	<i>re.</i> versus partes boreales	184		<i>re.</i> dilatione
23	9	<i>re.</i> boreales	23		<i>re.</i> ils
35	8	<i>re.</i> Ralph, <i>vi.</i> Realph	183	2	<i>dele</i> : <i>re.</i> ces heures :
41	4	<i>re.</i> who came over	186	9	<i>re.</i> Collectours
	21	<i>re.</i> probably, <i>vi.</i> publicly	206	8	<i>re.</i> eadem
42	12	<i>re.</i> Derwent manor	207	3	<i>re.</i> proditores
48	10	<i>re.</i> Phillippi Courtney		6	<i>re.</i> Catalla
60	22	<i>re.</i> they ne none of them	208	1	<i>re.</i> prisonis, l. 17. <i>re.</i> ima.
65	2	<i>re.</i> terminez	209	2	<i>re.</i> resistentiam
66	21	<i>re.</i> Anno 1. H. 4.	214	15	<i>re.</i> vii. <i>vi.</i> vi.
70	3	<i>re.</i> Earls	225	12	<i>re.</i> Treasurer
71	14	<i>re.</i> anno 13. R. 2.	256	21	<i>re.</i> distincte
78	9	<i>re.</i> Rempton	258	7	<i>re.</i> nostrum
121	23	<i>re.</i> fame	260	8	<i>re.</i> nostrum
134	18	<i>re.</i> victualling	275	21	<i>re.</i> procuratorial
135	21	<i>re.</i> Gerneseye, <i>vice</i> Jersey	278	3	<i>re.</i> præstiti, <i>vi.</i> profiti
136	17	<i>re.</i> respondre	341	23	<i>re.</i> Ilfracombe
151	2	<i>re.</i> and, <i>vi.</i> or	346	1	<i>re.</i> fides

Note, In the numerical order of the appointments of the Admirals in p. 17, John Perburn is made the 10th. but should have been the 13th, which mistake runs through the whole series.

The three last articles of the general abstract of the shipping of the Cinque Ports, by the compositor's mistaking my instructions to reduce six lines as they stand in the manuscript into three are set wrong, they should have been thus :

Dover,	}	Small barks and boats,	-	00
**sforde (prob. Aylesford)		Maisters,	-	00
Pevensey,		Maryners,	-	00

1800 OCT 26 1972

